# THE PHYSIOLOGICAL SIGNIFICANCE

# of

## p-AMINOBENZOIC ACID.

by

B.M. Bloomberg.

-----

Thesis Submitted for the Degree of

Doctor of Medicine

in the

University of the Witwatersrand,

Johannesburg.

-----

APRIL 1946.



INTRODUCTION.	1-2.
CHAPTER I. THE RELATION OF P-AMINOBENZOIC ACID TO THE SULPHONAMIDES.	3-33.
Fildes' "essential metabolite" hypothesis.	3.
Inhibition by p-aminobenzoic acid of sulphona- mide action against viruses, bacteria, fungi and protozoa.	5.
Identification of enzyme systems involved in utilisation of p-aminobenzoic acid	15.
Seveg's theory of "inhibition of bacterial re- spiration" by sulphonamides	17.
The "narcotic hypothesis" of Johnson	19.
McIlwain's modification of Fildes' hypothesis.	20.
Kohn and Harris' modification of Pildes' hypo- thesis	23.
Relationship between p-aminobenzoic acid de- rivatives and sulphonamides	31.
Effect of p-aminobenzoic acid on the toxic effects of sulphonamides in animals and man.	32.
Summary	32.
CHAPTER II. THE DETERMINATION OF P-AMINOBENZOIC ACID.	34-67.
A. Chemical methods	34.
B. Microbiological methods	37.
Selection of assay method for p-aminobenzoic acid.	43.
Description of microbiological method used for the estimation of p-aminobenzoic acid	45.
Active and inactive forms of p-aminobenzoic acid.	50.

10%.

	10/.
	Page.
Methods of converting the inactive to the active form.	53.
Active and inactive forms of p-aminobenzoic acid excreted in normal urine	55.
Preparation of p-aminobenzoic acid:-	58.
From procaine hydrochloride	59.
From benzocaine	60.
Experiment 1. Estimation of sensitivity of assay	62.
Experiment 2. Behaviour of p-aminobenzoic acid and various of its derivatives when tested under the assay conditions used.	63.
Summery	67.
CHAPTER III. THE ABSORPTION AND EXCRETION OF P-AMINO- BENEOIC ACID.	68-82.
Review of previous studies on absorption and ex- cretion of p-aminobenzoic acid	68.
Absorption and excretion of p-aminobenzoic acid in man after feeding minute doses	70.
Experiment 3. Excretion of p-aminobanzoic acid after ingestion of 100 mg.	75.
Experiment 4. Excretion of p-aminobenzoic acid after ingestion of 25 mg.	77.
Experiment 5. Excretion of p-aminobensoic acid after ingestion of 10 mg.	78.
Experiment 6. Excrétion of p-aminobenzoic acid after ingestion of 1 mg. doses at 8-hourly intervals for 4 days	79.
Experiment 7. The p-aminobenzoic acid content	80.
Experiment 8. Absorption of p-aminobenzoic acid from the large intestine	61.
Experiment 9. Excretion of p-aminobenzoic acid by African patients with liver disease	82.
Summary	82 <b>a</b> .

	/ 0/ •
	Page.
CHAPTER IV. IS P-AMINOBENZOIC ACID A VITAMIN?	83-114
Definition of the term "vitamin"	83.
Relationship of "essential metabolites" and "growth factors" to "vitamins"	93.
Evidence for the vitamin character of p-aminobenzoic acid:-	94.
p-Aminobenzoic acid and achromotrichia.	95.
p-Aminobenzoic acid and chick nutrition.	108.
p-Aminobenzoic acid, fertility and lac- tation.	109.
Summary	113.
CHAPTER V. THE PHYSIOLOGICAL SIGNIFICANCE OF P-AMINOBENZOIC ACID IN HIGHER ANIMALS AND MAN.	115-129.
Occurrence.	115.
Intestinal synthesis of p-aminobenzoic acid.	118.
Experiment 10: Synthesis of p-aminobenzoic acid by intestinal bacteria of man	119.
Relationship of p-aminobenzoic acid to intes- tinal bacterial synthesis	122.
Direct effects of p-aminobenzoic acid on the mammalian organism:-	
(a) Correlation of p-aminobenzoic acid with sunburn	124.
(b) Relationship of p-aminobenzoic acid to hormones	126.
Summary	129.
CHAPTER VI. THE EFFECT OF P-AMINOBENZOIC ACID ON THE RESISTANCE OF ANIMALS TO DISEASE.	130-181.
Effect of "large" amounts of p-aminobenzoic acid on cultures of B. coli and various pathogenic intestinal bacteria	131.

ici.

/ð/.

Pa	ze.

	Page.
Renaniment 11 - Reflact of 0 01%-1% monthemate	
Experiment 11. Effect of 0.01%-1% p-aminobenzoic	
acid on B. coli, typhoid, paratyphoid, food-	9.77
poisoning and dysentery organisms	133
Experiment 12. Effect of 0.1%-1% sulphapyridine	
on B. coli, typhoid, paratyphoid, food-poison-	
ing and dysenteric organisms	136
Effect of p-aminobenzoic acid on experimental	
typhoid infection in mice	137
Experiment 13. Effect of p-aminobenzoic acid on	
experimentally-produced typhoid infection in	
mice	139
Experiment 14. Effect of preliminary injections	
of p-aminobenzoic acid on the treatment of	
typhoid infections in mice	144
Experiment 15. Effect of injections of p-amino-	
benzoic acid on subsequently induced typhoid	
infection in mice	149
Experiment 16. Effect of oral administration of	
p-aminobenzoic acid on subsequently induced	350
typhoid infection in mice	152
Effect of p-aminobenzoic acid on experimental	
tuberculosis in guinea-pigs	158
Anon caronen zu Barnon been.	± ) (
Experiment 17. Effect of p-aminobenzoic acid on	
tuberculosis in guinea-pigs	159
	-
Effect of p-aminobenzoic acid on the activity of	
the reticulo-endothelial system	168
Effect of p-aminobenzoic acid on the development	
of antibodies.	172
	± ( 6
Experiment 18. Effect of p-aminobenzoic acid on	
the development of antibodies	174
Summary	179

GENERAL	SUMMARY	AND	CONCLUSIONS.		182-186.
BIBLIOGE	APHY.			N. Contraction of the second sec	i-xi.

1 1/20 120

## INTRODUCTION.

in conversion and service

The interest of the biochemist in pars-aminobenzoic acid is very recent and, indeed, only goes back about five years, but in this time quite a voluminous literature has accumulated on the biological aspects and importance of this aniline derivative.

sub-borrapides. There of a second the providence of the second se

Attention was originally forussed on it indirectly as a result of the intensive research devoted to the understanding of the mode of action of the various sulphonamides, which were shown during the last decade to be very powerful chemotherapeutic agents against many bacteria. Fildes (1940)propounded the hypothesis that p-aminobenzoic acid was an essential metabolite for bacteria, that it was normally associated with an enzyme system in the bacterial cell, and that sulphanilamide, being structurally similar to p-aminobenzoic acid, was capable in sufficient concentration of displacing p-aminobenzoic acid from its enzyme and stopping this essential line of metabolism. Fildes further suggested that a substance which was found to be an essential metabolite for bacteria would also be essential in the animal kingdom, so that such a substance might be found to act as a vitamin in the higher animals and even in man.

In 1941 interest in p-aminobenzoic acid was intensified with the announcement by Ansbacher (1941) that p-aminobenzoic acid was actually a vitamin and should be included in the vitamin B complex.

In this thesis, studies on the absorption and excretion of p-aminobenzoic acid are reported, the estimation of p-aminobenzoic acid being based on its property of antagonising the sulphonamides. Evidence is presented that p-aminobenzoic acid is excreted as p-acetylaminobenzoic acid, and that its conjugation with the acetyl radical probably takes place in the liver. Further it is suggested that the experiments performed do not lend support to the view that p-aminobenzoic acid is a vitamin for man.

Finally the various physiological effects of p-aminobenzoic acid are discussed and an attempt is made to gauge its function in the living organism. Preliminary experiments indicating a new, hitherto unreported, role of p-aminobenzoic acid are recorded, namely its ability in large doses to increase the resistence of animals to disease.

.

#### CHAPTER I.

# THE RELATION OF . - AMINOBENZOIC ACID TO THE SUL HONANIDES.

Since the earlier work on p-aminobenzoic acid consisted entirely of investigations into its effect of antagonising sulphonamides, and since the experimental method used here is based on these considerations, it has been thought advisable to discuss this relationship before describing the actual experimental procedures used.

#### PILDES' "ESSENTIAL METABOLITE" HY OTHESIS.

Stamp (1939 isolated from cultures of haemolytic streptococci a fraction capable of antagonising the bacteriostatic action of sulphanilamide and sulphapyridine in vitro. He found that this fraction could be extracted from the bacterial cell by means of dilute alkali, that it was resistant to heat, free from protein (gave a positive ninhydrin reaction, indicating the presence of free amino-acids, and consisted of material of relatively low molecular weight. It was active in low concentrations. All of these properties are compatible with the active substance being para-aminobenzoic acid, although Stamp did not identify the active substance in his extract. This author, however, discussed the possibility of an enzyme system affected by the sulphonamide drugs, thus anticipating Fildes' (1940, hypothesis.

code and Fildes (1940) observed in in vitro experiments that para-aminobenzoic acid exerted an anti-sulphanilamide effect. Woods (1940, also showed that yeast extracts contained a substance which reversed the inhibitory action of sulphanilamide on the growth of haemolytic streptococci, and suggested on the basis of the chemical properties of this substance and its behaviour in growth tests that it might be chemically related to sulphanilamide (p-aminobenzenesulphonamide). Since p-aminobenzoic acid had high activity in antagonising sulphanilamide inhibition, he concluded that the evidence, though circumstantial, indicated that the yeast factor was in fact p-aminobenzoic acid, and further suggested that p-aminobenzoic acid and sulphanilamide had a common point of action on some enzyme system or systems in the bacterial body. Fildes' hypothesis has already been mentioned, and although he offers no proof for his statement that essential metabolites are common to most or all cells, whether bacteria or not, his hypothesis has been chiefly valuable in that it has indicated a rational approach to research in chemotherapy. This, however, cannot be discussed here.

The following formulae show the relationship between these compounds :-

- COCH HoN -

 $-SO_2.NH_2$ 

p-aminobenzoic acid.

p-aminobenzene-sulphonamide. (sulphanilamide)

-802.NH

sulphapyridine.

2HN -- S02. NH

sulphathiazole.

- NH CH CH N=CH

sulphadiazine.

802 - N-C= .... 2HN -

sulphaguanidine.

lage 4.

#### INHIBITION BY P-AMINOBENZOIC ACID C SULPHONAMIDE ACTION AGAINST VIRUSES, BACTERIA FUNGI AND RUTUZOA.

Selbie (1940, also showed that the therapeutic effect of sulphanilamide in mice infected with streptococci could be inhibited by p-aminobenzoic acid. Findlay (1940, confirmed that p-aminobenzoic acid inhibited the chemotherapeutic activity of sulphanilamide on haemolytic streptococci in mice. and also showed that p-aminobenzoic acid could inhibit the chemotherapeutic action of sulphanilamide on the virus of lymphogranulona venereum. He suggested that p-aminobenzoic acid of some closely allied compound formed from it in the fissues. would thus appear to be an essential metabolite for the virus of lymphogranulona venereum. Since this virus and that of trachoma are the only ones known to be acted upon by sulphanilamide, Findlay suggests that these viruses might be regarded as the only two which require p-aminobenzoic acid for their metabolism. For all other viruses p-aminobenzoic acid would thus not be an essential metabolite. However, since as yet viruses cannot be cultivated in the absence of living cells, and since there is also some doubt as to whether viruses are living agents at all, this suggestion is a very difficult one to prove or disprove. . There is, for instance, the possibility that the presence of p-aminobenzoic acid in, or its synthesis by, the different cells in which the development and growth of

viruses occurs, determines whether viruses will grow in such cells and whether sulphonamides have an action against such This question requires investigation and is of virusca. great practical significance. For example, Yeomans et al (1944) in showing that p-aminobenzois acid has a therapeutic effect in typhus fever suggests that its effect might be due to its action on the cells of the host in which the causative organism. Rickettsia prowazeki. multiplies. This organism. like filterable viruses. cannot be cultivated in vitro. Freliminary experiments conducted here on typhoid fever in mice and reported on p.137 indicate that p-aminobenzoic soid has mammalian some effect on the resistance of the/organism to infection, possibly acting on the R-E system. A further paper of interest in this connection is the finding of Marshall. Litchfield and White (1942; that p-aminobenzoic acid had a slight but definite activity against duck malaria, caused by Flasmodium lophurae - a protozoan perasite which in its early development also multiplies in the R-E system.

Woode (1940) demonstrated the activity of p-aminobenzoic acid in antagonising sulphanilamide inhibition against bacteria. He used Escherichia coli as the test organism and an entirely synthetic basal medium to culture the organism. McLeod (1940), using also an entirely synthetic basal medium and Escherichia coli as the test organism, demonstrated the presence of an unidentified sulphonamide inhibitor in extracts of fresh normal muscle, pancreas, and spleen of certain animals. The amount of this inhibitor was greatly increased when autolysis of the tissue had taken place, and it could

then be demonstrated in the livers of beef. rabbit and guineapig, and in the rabbit kidney. Similar results were obtained after acid hydrolysis of these tissues. A modification of McLeod's medium and method has been used to estimate p-aminobenzoic acid in the experiments reported in this thesis. Under the conditions of these experiments, p-aminobenzoic acid antegonises the inhibitory action of sulphapyridine. the sulphonamide derivative used by McLeod, which indicates the probability that McLeod's inhibitor was actually p-aminobenzoic acid. It is also probable that the inactive form of this inhibitor was the acetyl derivative of p-aminobenzoic acid namely p-acetyl aminobenzoic acid - and an experiment confirming this point is described later (Experiment 2; p.63.) McLeod, however, reported the presence of sulphonamide inhibitor in normal human urine after acid hydrolysis, but this fact I have been unable to confirm (Expts. 3 - 9; pp. 75/82) Sulphonamide inhibitor was also found in some, but not all, sterile scrous effusions occurring during certain diseases, and in pus but not in blood serum. It is probable that where negative findings were obtained, the explanation is that the technique used was not sufficiently sensitive to demonstrate the minute amounts of p-aminobenzoic acid present. These points are further discussed later, (p. 44and Expt.7), where it is shown that when normal urine was concentrated sufficiently, the presence of p-aminobenzoic acid could be demonstrated. The development of sulphapyridine fustness in a strain of Diplococcus pneumoniae Type I was also shown by McLeod to result in a greatly increased production of

rage 7.

sulphonamide inhibitor. This fact has been confirmed by Spink, Wright, Vivino and Skeggs (1944), who state that sulphonamide-resistant strains of staphylococci produce more diazotizable substance, i.e. aromatic primary amines. than do sulphonamide-sensitive strains. Since exposing this diazotizable substance to Mirick's (1941) soil bacillus. which is specially adapted to oxidize p-aminobenzoic acid, destroys it, it can be inferred that this diazotizable substance is probably p-aminobenzoic acid. However. these workers point out that although in general sulphonaaide-resistant strains produce more p-aminobenzoic acid than sulphonamide-sensitive strains, these results are in-S. C. Landard Strategy of constant.

This may be due to the inhelent errors present in the micro-biological assay methods employed or may in fact indicate that the development of sulphonamide-resista de is not very closely related to p-aminobenzoic acid synthesis as claimed by Sevag and his co-workers in a series of papers discussed below.

and the the state of Tarta Date of

Landy, Largum, Oswald and Streightoff (1943, who present evidence that sulphonamide-resistant strains of staphylococcus aureus produce significantly more p-sminobenzoic acid (as much as 70 : 1 in some experiments, than the corresponding sensitive strains, were unable, however, to show by their method of p-aminobenzoic acid assay, significantly increased p-aminobenzoic acid production by sulphonamide-resistant strains of Diplococcus pneumoniae and other organisms, meterichia coli, Vibrio cholerae and and Shigella dysentence. They suggest on the basis of this evidence that the development of ability to synthesize p-sminobenzoic acid in excess of the normal metabolic requirements, as a result of continued exposure to sulphonamides, explains the phenomenon of sulphonamide fastness in S. aureus. Their experiments are, however, of greater significance in that these demonstrate very clearly the intimate nature of the antagonism between p-aminobenzoic acid and sulphonamides in the metabolism of bacteria.

Rubbo and Gillespie (1940, showed that p-aminobenzoic acid and certain of its derivatives act as growth factors for the anaerobic bacillus Clostridium acetobutylicum. They also showed that the growth factor in yeast was p-aminobenzoic acid which they extracted from yeast and isolated as the benzoyl derivative. They also found that one mol of p-aminobenzoic acid was able to antagonise 23,000 mols of sulphanilamide. Further, Rubbo. Maxwell, Pairbridge and Gillespie (1941, reported that the growth factor required by Cl. acetobutylicum conformed to the structural pattern of a di-substituted benzene ring in which the substituents occupy the 1 :4 positione. Optimal activity is developed when the substituents are an amino-group on the one side and a carboxyl or carboxymethyl on the other. Thus p-aminobenzoic acid stimulated growth in as small a concentration of 1.46 x 10-10M, and p-aminophenylacetic acid in 1.32 x 10-11M concentration. Substances which yield p-aminobenzoic acid by hydrolysis, reduction or oxidation, or by a

#### Page 9.

16.G 10.

combination of these reactions, also function as growth factors. In a later paper, Rubbo and Gillespie (1942) showed that the bacteriostatic effect of the sulphonamide drugs is countered by increasing the concentration of growth factor 10- to 100- fold above the amount necessary to promote growth, and that 1 part by weight of p-aminobenzoic acid reverses the bacteriostasis caused by 26,000 parts by weight of sulphanilamide. They agree with Fildes' hypothesis, that the structural configuration of a chemotherapeutic agent must conform to the structural pattern of an essential metabolite for the organism.

During 1941 and 1942 several further reports confirming the antagonism between p-aminobenzoic acid and the sulphonamide group of substances, and supporting Fildes' hypothesis, appeared in the literature. Straues, Lowell and Finland(1941) found a rough linear relationship between the concentrations of sulphonamides with bacteriostatic action on pneumococci in blood broth and the minimum concentration of p-aminobenzoic acid required to ibhibit that action. The action of p-aminobenzoic acid was most marked against sulphanilamide, less against sulphapyridine and least marked against sulphathiagole. Mirick (1941) utilised a suspension of a soil bacillus which he adapted to oxidize p-aminobenzoic acid specifically, and found that this suspension rapidly destroyed the sulphonamideinhibiting substance present in the filtrate prepared from a sulphonamide-resistant strain of pneumococcus. He showed. further, (Mirick, 1943) that sulphapyridine is bacteriostatic for this bacillus and this effect is inhibited by p-aminobenzoic acid. Loomis, Hubbard and Neter (1941) investigating

Page 11.

the inhibition of the bacteriostatic action of sulphanilamide by yeast extracts, found that there were at least two factors in their extracts which had anti-sulphanilamide activity. The one had properties which closely resembled p-aminobenzoic scid, but the other factor or factors which were not identified, had very different chemical properties. No further reports have appeared on the nature of these other substances, but later work confirms that p-aminobenzoic acid is not the only compound which antagonises sulphonemide activity and some interesting hypotheses have been developed to account for this antagonism. Dimond (1941) recorded the application of Woods' (1940) findings to the action of sulphanilamide on a dermatophyte, Trichophyton purpureum. The addition of sllphanilsmide in 1 : 1000 concentration caused complete inhibition of growth, this inhibition being completely nullified by the addition of p-aminobenzoic acid in concentrations as low as 1 : 500.000. P-aminobenzoic acid alone. however, had no effect in increasing the rate of growth. Landy and yeno (1941) confirmed the bacteriostatic effect. as measured in vitro, of sulphanilamide, sulphapyridine and sulphathiazole on streptococci, pneumococci and staphylococci, and found this effect was completely neutralised by p-amino benzoic acid. They also demonstrated the inactivity of the ortho- and meta-isomers of p-aminobenzoic acid, from which they concluded, perhaps hastily, that p-aminobenzoic acid specifically neutralises sulphonamide activity. In the following year, Landy and Dicken (1942) showed that yeast growth was completely inhibited by sulphonamides. and that this inhibition neutralised by p-eminobenzoic acid. They

found that yeast synthesizes either p-aminobenzoic acid or its biologically active equivalent and, therefore, suggest that p-aminobenzoic acid is of importance in yeast metabol-

Wiedling (1941) conducted experiments in the bacteriological laboratory of the Swedish State at Stockholm. from which he concluded that p aminobenzoic acid is of the same importance to autotrophic plants as it is to the heterotrophically living bacteria. In experiments with two strains of the small fresh-water diatom <u>Nitzachia palea var. debilis</u>, which were grown on an agar made up with tap-water and mineral salts, an inhibition of the effect of sulphanamide and its derivatives (sulphapyridine and sulphathiazole; was produced by p-aminobenzoic acid.

ism. possibly as the "essential metabolite" of Fildes.

In a series of experiments attempting to elucidate the mode of action of sulphanilamide. Green and Bielschowaky (1942a), (1942b), concluded that the bacterial anti-sulphanilamide factor showed chemical and biological properties similar to those of p-aminobenzoic acid and considered that the hypothesis advanced by Fildes and Woods provided the best explanation of the facts. They auggested that p-aminobenzoic acid is utilized by all bacteria. and synthesized by most. and that the rate of its synthesis determines the degree of sensitivity of the bacterial cell to sulphanilamide. They also found that some of the bacterial anti-sulphanilamide factor is present in a conjugated form which only became ether-soluble (p-aminobenzoic acid is ether-soluble) after acid hydrolysis, thus confirming in bacteria what MacLeod (1940) had found to hold for magmalian tissues. On the

Page 12.

basis of in vitro findings with a number of aromatic sulphur compounds, these authors suggested that the active principle of compounds with a sulphanilsmide-like action is the  $\frac{100}{2}$  - S radical, and that the sensitivity of bacteria to sulphanilamide is probably determined by the rate at which p-aminobenzoic acid is synthesized in the bacterial cell or is released into the surrounding medium. These authors also suggested that the more effectively a compound blocks the bacterial enzyme whose natural substrate is p-aminobenzoic acid, the greater is its bacteriostatic action.

Page 13.

Maier and Riley (1942 extended the observations on the antegonism of p-aminobenzoic acid and sulphonamides in viruses and bacteria by investigating this relationship in the plasmodial class of protosoa. They studied the inhibition of the antimalarial action of sulphonamides by p-aminobenzoic acid, using Plasmodium gallinaceum as the test infection in chicks, and found that whereas p-aminobenzoic acid itself produced no increase in the incubation period and no change in the infection itself, at certain dosage levels it antagonised completely the inhibitory effect of sulphanila mide, sulphathiazole and sulphadiazine. It failed, however, to alter the effect of the commonly used antimalarial drugs, quinine and atebrine. Their results suggest that the mechanism of inhibition by sulphonamides is similar for bacteria. viruses and plasmodia. Marshall, Litchfield and White (1942) independently made similar observations on malaris in ducks, and their experiments showed that p-aminobenzoic acid antagonised the antimalarial action of sulphaguanidine. They

1020 IL.

also considered it probable that this antagonistic effect is intimately associated with the mode of action of sulphonamides in plasmodia as it is in bacteria.

Wood (1942; reported studies adding direct evidence in fayour of Woods' and Fildes' theory. He observed that, over a wide range of concentrations, p-aminobenzoic acid neutralized the bacteriostatic properties of all of the six sulphonamide compounds studied, sulphanilamide, sulphaguanidine.sulphapyridine. sulphathiazole. sulphadiazine and diamino-diphenylsulphone, regardless of the differences in their chemical structure. It was found also that the amount of p-aminobenzoic acid needed to prevent bacteriostasis was directly proportional to the bacteriostatic potency of the drug, provided all other variables were held constant. Both of these observations suggested to the author that the bacteriostatic mechanism of the sulphonamide drugs works mainly, if not entirely, through the p-amino nucleus which is common to p-aminobenzoic acid and to all the drugs tested. The experimental finding that an organism made "drug fast" to sulphathiazole is found to be resistent to the action of other sulphonamide compounds also substantiates this concept.

If p-aminobenzoic acid is essential for bacterial growth, and the sulphonamide drugs, through their chemical similarity to this essential metabolite, succeed in blocking the enzyme system normally involved in its utilisation, it obviously follows that the bacteria will not grow. The experimental finding that one mol of p-aminobenzoic acid will antagonise the action of several thousand mole of sulpha drugs - 1000 to 26,000 mole in different reports - does not invalidate this theory as to the mechanism of bacteriostasis; it may only indicate that the essential metabolite has a far greater affinity for the enzyme than has the drug, in which case a great excess of drug will be required to block the essential metabolite from its bacterial enzyme, or that there are variable amounts of sulphonamide antagonists already present in the culture medium which have also to be neutralised by the sulphonamide added. The wellknown lag in the bacteriostatic action of these drugs may be explained by assuming that the supply of p-aminobenzoic acid already in the medium (and possibly combined with bacterial enzyme, must become inadequate before the rate of bacterial growth will be noticeably affected.

Page 15.

# IDENTIFICATION OF ENZYME SYSTEMS INVOLVED IN UTILISATION OF P-AMINOBENTOIC ACID.

Several studies on this problem have already been reported. As an example of the competition between sulphanilamide and p-aminobenzoic acid in zome essential enzymatic reaction in the cells, Lipmann (1941, called attention to the experimental fact that peroxidase catalysed the oxidation of p-aminobenzoic acid by hydrogen peroxide and that this reaction is inhibited by sulphonamides. No reaction takes place between p-aminobenzoic acid and  $H_{2}O_{2}$  without the enzyme, the addition of which causes a red dye to be formed,  $H_{2}O_{2}$ disappearing in amounts proportional to the colour formed. In the presence of sulphanilamide, less of the red dye is

produced and proportionately less hydrogen peroxide disappears. Sulphathiazole and sulphapyridine are similarly active. However, Lipmann also found that peroxidase catalysed the reaction between H202 and other substrates, pyrogallol and tyramine, and that these reactions were likewise inhibited by sulphanilamide. Further, in the presence of catalytic amounts of catechol, p-aminobenzoic acid is oxidised by a phenol oxidase, a red dye again resulting. This reaction, however, was not inhibited by sulphanilamide. It is difficult to correlate these enzymatic reactions and the biological activity of p-aminobensoic acid and sulphanilamide since McLeod (1939) showed that many organisms susceptible to the action of sulphanilamide are unable to decompose hydrogen peroxide. This makes it difficult to imagine any general inter-relation between a peroxidage reaction and However, connection between the sulphanilamide activity. metabolism of phenolic substances and p-aminobenzoic acid is confirmed by Martin and Ansbacher's (1941) findings that the graying of the fur of animals produced by hydroquinone, first shown by lettel (1936) and later confirmed by Martin could be cured by administering p-aminobenzoic The amount of p-aminobenzoic acid required was acid. 0.75 mg. daily to prevent hydroguinone achromotrichia in mice weighing 10 to 12 gm. - a relatively large quantity. Later, Martin, Ichniowski, Wisansky and Ansbacher (1942) showed that the oxidative destruction of adrenaline in a tyrosinase-adrenalin system is promoted by C-substituted phenol and inhibited by aminobenzoic acide, including p-aminobenzoic acid.

lage 16.

.a.e 17.

BULPHONAMIDES.

Sevag and Shelburne (1942), could not support the "anti-catalase theory" of the action of sulphonamides, and considered that sulphanilamide acted primarily by blocking the reepiratory enzymes rather than by interfering with the synthetic processes necessary for growth, as stated by Fildes. Further, Sevag, Shelburne and Mudd (1942, investigated the inhibition of bacterial and yeast carboxylases by sulphonamide drugs structurally related to cocarboxylase, and concluded that their results supported the hypothesis that sulphonamides exert their bacteriostatic action through chemical affinity for the carrier proteins of certain respiratory enzymes of the bacterial cell, and that this affinity may in part be related to structural similarity between components of the drugs and the corresponding respiratory coenzymes. Sevag and Shelburne's results (1942; in addition provide strong criticisms of Fildes' hypothesis. I'dn Fildes' view, the "sensitivity" of a microbe to sulphanilamide would depend at least in part upon whether it could synthesize p-aminobenzoic acid readily or not. An organism whose synthetic powers were poor should be more sensitive than one with greater Similarly a large number of bacteria should be powers. less affected by a certain concentration of sulphanilamide than a small number. Inhibition or not would become a question of the propertion of sulphanilamide to p-aminobenzoic acid affecting the enzymes of each cell. Sevag and Shelburne's findings are at variance with the above

view expressed by Fildes regarding the role of p-aminobenzoic They found that 0.012 to 0.035 M p-aminobensoic acid, acid. in the absence of sulphanilamids, inhibits the aerobic and anaerobic respiration of streptococci to the extent of 10 -50% during a 1- to 3-hour period. In growth experiments, observed after 2-, 8-, 19- and 23-hour periods, 0.035 M p-aminobenzoic acid per se inhibited the growth 22. 34, 63. 67% respectively, and with 0.006 M concentration this effect was, respectively, 0, 0, 23 and 20%. Lower concentrations neither inhibited nor accelerated growth. 0.012 to 0.35 M p-aminopenzoic acid exercises a continuous additive inhibiting effect on the respiration of streptococci in the presence of sulphanilamide. The inhibiting effect of sulphanilamide on respiration may cometimes be nearly completely or partially reversed by 0.006 to 0.0006 M p-aminobenzoic acid. but at other times it has no effect whatsoever.

Page 18.

This inhibition of respiration of E.coli, S. aureus and Streptococcus pyogenes has been confirmed by Wyss, Strandskov, and Schmelkes (1942), but these latter workers, however, also reported that the inhibition of respiration could not be correlated with the bacteriostatic potency of sulphanilamide since its inective isomers, meta- and orthoaminobenzenesulphonamide also inhibitg respiration and, in addition, sulphanilamide inhibited respiration equally of a resistant strain of E. coli, but did not affect growth, which throws some doubt on the validity of Sevag's criticism of Fildes' hypothesis, since it indicates that sulphonamider may act on different enzyme systems in the bacterial cell to produce effects both on respiration and growth. Hyss, Strandskov and Schmelkes concluded that the inhibition of bacterial respiration by sulphonamides should not be regarded as typical of sulphonamide activity and that it was not a suitable criterion of the presence or absence of true sulphonamide activity. THE "NARCOTIC HYPOTHESIS" OF JOHNSON.

Johnson (1942) presented an entirely new theory of the mechanism of p-aminobenzoic acid and sulphonamide action. He drew attention to the fact that narcotics and many toxic materials have stimulatory effects in low. and inhibitory in high concentration, effects, and that both p-aminobenzoic acid and sulphonamides acted in the manner of narcotics. He found that ethyl carbonate (urethane), as well as p-aminobenzoic acid, exerted an antisulphanilamide effect on luminous bacteria. The results were more striking in relation to luminescence than to growth. although both were influenced. Johnson considered that structural similarities between the molecules of urethane and sulphanilamide were so remote as to rule out competitive action and urethane could hardly be considered an essential metabolite. All three compounds. urethane. paminobenzoic acid and sulphanilamide, could, however, act in the manner of narcotics on luminous bacteria, stimulating growth and luminescence in low, while inhibiting in high con-Lamanna (1942) also reported a stimulatory centrations. effect on growth of some bacteria and some yeasts by sulphanilamide in low concentrations. Many narcotics have been found to have similar effects.

A further point emphasized by Johnson is that the stimulatory effects of one narcotic may antagonise or completely

overcome the inhibitory effects of another that is simultaneously If the inhibitor is sulphanilamide, the antagonist is present. naturally locked upon as "anti-sulphanilamide". The antisulphanilamide action of both urethane and p-aminobenzoic acid might well belong in this category, and the molecular structure of the antagonist narcotics need not be closely related, as would be required for competitive inhibition in the physico-chemical sense. Johnson's argument, however, cannot gainsay that it is equally feasible for p-aminobenzoic acid to antagonise sulphonamides by virtue of its being an "essential metabolite", while urethane neutralises sulphonamide in an entirely different way. His work, therefore, cannot be considered to have conclusively disproved Fildes' hypothesis. Support for this view is offered by McIlwain (1942).

### MCIL AIN'S MODIFICATION OF FILDES' HYPOTHESIS.

orking in Wood's laboratory, McIlwain examined Johnson's contentions, and pointed out an important difference between the antagonistic actions of urethane and p-aminobenzoic acid on sulphonamide inhibition of the growth of other bacteria. McIlwain found that urethane, under certain conditions, antagonised growth inhibition of S. haemolyticus and E. coli caused by sulphanilamide, but that these conditions were limited, and illustrated well the reason for Fildes' and Wood's hypothesis. He found that much more urethane (between 1-100 mols) than p-aminobenzoic acid(1/5000 mol was necessary to antagonise the antibacterial action of a given quantity of sulphanilamide (1 mol) and that this effect was not reproducible with certainty. McIlwain, therefore, considered that it was difficult to picture the mode of

1835 20.

-age 21.

action of so emall a proportion of p-aminobenzoic acid except by a specific enzyme mechanism, but that this did not necessarily apply to urethane. Further, the urethane antagonism was shown only towards low concentrations of sulphanilamide, which were just anti-streptococcal, whereas Fildes found that the ratio  $C_{\rm R}/C_{\rm D}$ , where  $C_{\rm R}$  was the minimal concentration of sulphanilamide necessary for bacterioatasis in the presence of a concentration Cn of p-aminobenzoic acid, was constant, which is consistent with the view that sulphanilamide acted by inhibition of an enzyme normally reacting with p-aminobenzoic acid. The non-competitive type of antagonism shown by urethane is also known to be given by methionine, the action of which is harmonised with the p-aminobenzoic acid theory by an interesting extension of Wood's and Fildes' hypotheeis by Harris and Kohn in their series of papers discussed below. McIlwain deduced further evidence against Johnson's "narcotic hypothesis" by a study of the action of other antibacterial agents, which were, like sulphanilamide, related to growth essentials. and whose action could be readily explained in terms of competitive enzyme inhibition. Thus the inhibition of pyridine-3-sulphonamide was unaffected by the presence of p-aminobenzoic acid or pantothenic acid, but was antagonised by a definite fraction of its concentration of nicotinic acid; pantothenic acid, but not nicotinic acid or p-aminobenzoic acid, reversed the inhibition due to pantoyltaurine. llowever, some other publications discussed later have appeared more recently, querying Fildes' and Wood's theory. Hirsch (1942) found that the antibacterial effects of p-aminobenzamide and p-aminophenylarsinic

20:1 22.

acid (or atoxyl) on E. coli, which is not as strong as sulphanilamide. are also antagonised by p-aminobenzoic acid.

nicotinic acid.

- COOH

pantothenic acid.

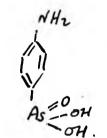
p-aminobenzamide.

pyridine-3-sulphonamide.

SO2. NH2

pantoyltaurine.

HO. HC - C - CH. CO. NH. CH2. COON HO. HC-C - CH. CO. NH. CH2. CH2. SO, H. CH3 CH3 p-aminophenylarsonic acid. (atoxyl.



Wood and Austrian (1942), however, found that, using cultures of staphylococcus aureus in a synthetic medium, nicotinamide and cozymase (diphosphopyridine-adenine-nucleotide, blocked the bacteriostatic action of chemically unrelated sulphonamide drugs as well as the chemically related compound sulphapyridine. and further that the antagonistic action of the pyndine-containing coenzyme, cozymasc, was no greater against sulphapyridine than against other structurally dissimilar sulphonamids compounds. They observed that the antidrug effects of nicotinamide and cozymage in staphylococcal cultures were directly proportional to their ability to atimulate the growth of the organism in the synthetic medium. When tested in cultures of E. coli in which

they failed to accelerate bacterial growth, these same substances failed to influence the bacteriostatic action of the sulphonamide drugs. Another observation made by these work kers was that the in vitro action of the coenzyme, cocarboxylase, as measured in the Warburg respircmeter, was unaffected by the chemically related drug, sulphathiasole, even when the latter was present in great excess. These observations fail to confirm McIlwain's experiments and do not support the theory that sulphapyridine, sulphathiazole and sulphadiazine prevent bacterial growth by interfering with the functioning of the chemically related coenzymes, cozymase and cocarboxylase. The greater antibacterial powers of the substituted sulphonamide compounds may be explained by assuming that the chemical group attached to the sulphonamide radical enables the compounds to interfere with the metabolism of p-aminobenzoic acid more effectively than does the simpler sulphanilamide molecule. According to this "unitarian theory", the only metabolic function of the bacterial cell interfered with by the sulphonamide compounds is that concerned with the utilisation of p-aminobenzoic scid, the degree to which this function is disturbed determining the relative bacteriostatic potency of the drug.

### KOHN AND HARRIS' MODIFICATION OF FILDES' HYPOTHESIS.

Rohn and Harris (1941) formulated a new theory which transferred p-aminobenzoic acid from the role of a substrate to that of a catalyst. Their theory was based upon the fact that several other compounds had been shown to have an anti

BE0 23.

sulphonamide effect. For example, the same authors showed that methionine antagonised the action of sulphanilamide, sulphapyridine, sulphadiazine and sulphathiazole on E. coli. But methionine, unlike p-aminobenzoic acid, was only effective against low concentrations of the sulphonamides, and did not exhibit a simple relationship in the concentrations necessary to antagonise increasing amounts of the sulphonamides. Commercial peptone, used as an ingredient for many routine culture media was also shown to have an anti-sulphonamide action.

rage 24.

Kohn and Harris (1941) schematised sulphonemide action as follows: among the syntheses in the cell necessary for growth and multiplication there is a special group X (termed secondary reactions) into which enter substances (including methionine and peptone; the production of which is catalysed by p-aminobenzoic acid (termed primary reactions). the stores of X fall below a critical concentration, growth rate decreases. This state of affairs is brought about by sulphonamides. Methionine exhibits an antisulphonamide action when the sulphonamide concentration is small, since the primary reaction involving methionine synthesis only is inhibited by such low concentrations. Therefore, both methionine and p-aminobenzoic acid are effective. As the drug concentration is increased more primary reactions become inhibited, and the synthesis of the other X components, in turn, is inhibited. P-aminobenzoic acid still remains effective as an antagonist since it restores the primary reactions and all the secondary reactions then follow. This theory thus proposes an alternative extension to Fildes' and Wood's

hypothesis of the fundamental antagonism between p-aminobenzoic acid and sulphonamides.

Henry (1943, p.212), in a review on the mode of action of sulphonamides, criticised Kohn and Harris' theory on the following grounds. The essential facts underlying Kohn and Harris' interpretation were the following: First. that a latent period existed before sulphonamide action manifested itself in vitro. Second, methionine was able to counteract sulphonamide action. but only at low concentrations of sulphonamides. Third, ethionine, norvaline and norleucine inhibited bacterial growth and synergized sulphanilamide action, possibly by competing with and displacing methionine in the cell, since addition of methionins (or peptone), but not p-aminobenzoic acid. abolished these inhibitions. This was interpreted as placing the methionine antagonism in a reaction secondary to primary reactions involving p-aminobenzoic acid. Henry considered that two objections can be raised to this theory: firstly. the delay in sulphonamide action, though reported by many workers, was not always found, and secondly, there was no known example where an excess of enzyme produced an inhibition, and it was well-established that p-aminobenzoic acid acted as an inhibitor in concentrations above those which antagonised sulphonamide activity. This finding incidentally was confirmed here under guite different experimental conditions. (p.

Henry (1943, p.220) summed up the present status of sulphonamide antagonists as follows: A great number of substances with a great diversity of source antagonised sulphonamide inhibition. The first question to be answered was whether

1468 25.

their antegonistic activity was due to their p-aminobenzoic acid content. This obviously could not be the case with methionine. urethane. glucose and other substances of known composition. For the remainder of the antagonists, those of unknown composition, it was thought, after the appearance of the Woods-Fildes theory, that they owed their activity to their p-aminobenzoid content. This assumption still persisted largely to-day. although there was no absolutely conclusive proof that p-aminobenzoic acid was present in any of these substances. Such evidence as the demonstration of the presence of diagotigable compounds in these substances indicated the presence of a primary aromatic amine, which might not necessarily be p-aminobenzoic acid. Purther. sulphonamide antagonists had been shown to act either by specific interference or by non-specific growth-stimulation, or by inactive complex formation, whereas p-aminobenzoic acid had been conclusively shown to act by the first method, certainly not by the second, and only possibly by the third method.

It must be admitted that the antagonism of the sulphonamide inhibition of the carboxylase enzyme system by p-aminobenzoic acid could scarcely be explained on the basis of the latter's functioning as an essential metabolite or substrate. Becondly, in the experiments of Bevag and his co-workers with live bacteria, the experimental conditions were such that growth could not take place, yet antagonism of respiratory inhibition by sulphonsmides was obtainable in the presence of p-aminobenzoic acid. Since, therefore, this antagonism took place in the absence of growth, the contention of these workers that the counteraction of the growth-inhibiting effect of sulphonamides with p-aminobenzoic sold could occur through the pathway of respiratory enzymes appears resonnable. But, again, these enzyme systems have not as yet been identified with certainty.

More recently, Sevag and Green (1944a) reported that the formation of an arylamine, i.e. a primary aromatic amine, by a strain of staphyloccus aureus which had been rendered resistant to sulphonamides, depended on the presence simultaneously of glucose and tryptophane, or pyruvate and tryptophane, in the medium, and that in the absence of glucose, pyruvate and tryptophane, growth took place without the formation of p-aminobenzoic acid.

Later Sevag and Green (1944b) reported that the arylamine found in the culture fluids of staphyloccus aureus was derived from tryptophane. They also found, unlike Landy et al (1943), that any degree of growth of a resistant strain of S. aureus could take place without the formation of arylamine. A susceptible strain could slao be made to produce large amounts of arylamine without a corresponding change in resistance to sulphonamides. The development of resistance and increased arylamine formation were, therefore, considered by the authors to be unassociated processes. This finding that a micro-organism could become resistant to sulphonamides, without this resistance being due to increased synthesis of p-aminobenzoic acid, constitutes perhaps the severest blow to the Woods-Fildes' theory.

A possible link between the development of resistance and increased arylamine formation, if this does occur, might arise from the interference of sulphonamides with tryptophane metabolism, and the conversion of tryptophane to

## PREP 27.

arylamine. Seven and Green (1944c) stressed that there was as yet no adequate, rigorous, chemical or physiological evidence that p-sminobenzoic acid synthesis occurred at all under normal conditions of bacterial growth. It should deo bs noted that the Woode-Fildes' hypothesis of the mode of action of sulphonsmides, and those concepts which were formulated as extensions or adaptations of their hypothesis were primarily based on the results obtained with p-aminobenzoic acid added to the bacterial growth systems, whereas the results of Sevag and Green indicate that this concept was not applicable to conditions of normal bacterial growth, in particular to that of S. aureus. Their results, moreover, show that the development of resistance to sulphonamides was associated with the development of a sulphonamide-resistant type of glucose metabolism and not to an increased synthesis of p-aminobenzoic acid. In the presence of glucose, growth of a resistant strain of C. aureus occurred after the addition of sulphonamides. In the absence of glucose, the growth of the resistant 8. aureus was inhibited. This was in striking contrast to the high degree of inhibition of the growth of susceptible strains in the presence and absence of clucose. These observations indicate that during the development of resistance to sulphonemides, E. aureus had acquired the specialised ability of metabolising glucose in a manner which was not susceptible to the inhibitory action of sulphonsmides. Sevag and Green found that they could; by numerous subcultures of their sulphonamide-resistant strain of S. aureus on a medium without added glucose (and sulphonamides), so

ER1: 28.

alter the strain that it assumed a high degree of resistance to sulphonsmidee. even in the absence of glucose. Since the addition of tryptophane to the original sulphonamide-resistant strain (i.e.showing resistance only in the presence of glucose), antagonised inhibition by sulphonamides in the absence of glucose, the authors considered that the synthesis of growth-essential tryptophane from other amino-acids was inhibited by sulphonamides, but that this was counteracted in the presence of glucose. The inter-relationship, however, of glucose and amino-acid metabolism in such sylphonamide-resistant organisms is still obscure, slthough in a further paper sevag and Green (1944d) reported that pantothenic acid mediated (a) in the metabolism of glucose leading to, or involved in, the synthesis of tryptophane essential for the gowth of the exacting strains of staphylococcus aureus; (b) in oxidation of tryptophane when glucose is present to one or more arylamines (not p-aminobenzoic acid;; and (c) in the glucose-tryptophane metabolism is counteracting the inhibitory action of sulphonamides on the utilisation of added tryptophane. Hence they finally decided that the inhibition of the synthesis of tryptophane from glucose and amino-acids, and not the synthesis of p-aminobenzoic

acid, appeared to be the critical action of sulphonamides on S. sureus.

In other papers, Sevag and his co-workers have reported further studies on their "inhibition of respiration theory", as the mode of action of sulphonamides, which they put forward in 1942 and to which reference has already been made.(p.17) ((Sevag and Thelburne (1942); Sevag, Thelburne and Mudd, (1942).

#### Page 29.

They found (Sevag, Shelburne and Mudd, 1945) that sulphathiasole inhibited the carboxylase activity of whole yeast, and that one molecule of cocarboxylase added to the reaction system was capable of counteracing the inhibitory effect of from 8,088 to 53,400 molecules of sulphathiazole. In a second paper, Sevag, Henry and Richardson (1945) reported that p-aminobenzoic acid was incapable of reversing the inhibition, exercised on the carboxylase activity of E. coli, by acetaldehyde, the decarboxylation product of sodium pyru-The authors accepted as self-evident the fact that vate. acetaldehyde combined specifically with the active site of the carboxyluse enzyme and so prevented its activity. In contrast, p-aminobenzoic acid certainly counteracted the inhibition exerted on carboxylase by sulphathiazole, but its inhibitory effect was shown to be 10- to 20-fold less effective as a sulphathiagole antagonist than was the coenzyme, cocarboxylase. While antagonising the inhibitory effect of sulphathiazole on carboxylase, p-aminobenzoic acid at the same time, unlike cocarboxylase, also maintained a certain degree of inhibitory action on its own. In other words, p-aminobengoic acid was thus shown to function es an inhibitor, as well as an anti-inhibitor, which is inconsistent with the view that p-aminobenzoic acid is an essential metabolite. Various other investigators have reported similar observations. Further, in all the other experiments performed by Sevag and his collaborators, no evidence was found that p-aminobenzoic acid ever participated actively in the metabolic activities of the organisms studied to account for its sulphonamids-antegonising property.

Page 30.

Page 31. This was particularly true in those cases in which resting

cells, and isolated enzyme systems, were tested. It has already been indicated (p.28 of this thesis) that no direct, conclusive evidence has been obtained by other investigators for wood's and Fildes' "essential metabolite" theory. In a subsequent chapter the available literature on the status of p-aminobenzoic acid as a member of the vitamin B complex is critically reviewed, from which it is concluded that here, too, no certain proof of the essential part played by p-aminobenzoic acid in the metabolism of higher or lower snimals has been obtained.

RELATIONCHIP BETTEEN P-AMINOBENZOIC ACID DERIVATIVES AND SULPHORAMITES.

Many p-aminobenzoic acid derivatives are of great pharmacological importance as local anaesthetics. \_ Keltch, Baker, Krahl and Clowes (1941) investigated the anti-sulphapyridine and anti-sulphathiazole effect in vitro against E. coli of several local anaesthetics derived from p-aminobenzoic acid, \_\_\_ including benzocaine or anaesthesin (ethyl-p-amino-benzoate) and novocaine or procaine (beta-diethylamino-ethyl-p-aminobenzoate) and geveral other local anaesthetics not derived from p-sminobenzoic acid. They found that each of the p-aminobenzoic acid derivatives tested, partially or completely blocked the bacteriostatic effect of the sulphonsmide, whereas none of the non-p-aminobenzoic acid derivatives had any effect. Their experiments also indicated that the blocking effect was reduced but not eliminated by substitution in the amino-group or esterification of the carboxyl group of p-aminobenzoic acid. Peterson and Finland (1944)

#### Page 32.

found that procaine, in amounts ordinarily employed for local anaesthesia, may be absorbed into the circulation in sufficient concentration to exert an inhibiting effect on the action of sulphonamide drugs that might be present in the blood. EFFECT OF P-AMINOBENZOIC ACID ON THE TOXIC EFFECTS OF SULPHONAMIDES IN ANIMALS AND MAN

McCarty (1941) reported that p-sminobenzoic acid had no observable effect upon the immediate fatal toxicity of sulpha pyridine for mice. Strauss and Finland (1941, found that fevers and rashes due to sulphathiazole could neither be over--come nor prevented by the administration of p-aminobenzoic acid, even when given in amounts sufficient to overcome the antibacterial action of the sulphonamide drug in the blood and urine. These findings lend additional support to the view that the action of the sulphonamide drugs are not invariably related to a displacement of p-aminobenzoic acid as an essential metabelite for bacterial development.

# SUMBARY.

Pildes (1940) focussed attention on p-aminobenzoic soid by suggesting that it was an essential metabolite for bacteria and that it was normally associated with an enzyme system in the bacterial cell. He propounded the hypothesis that the sulphonamide group of drugs owed their bacteriostatic action to their structural similarity to p-aminobenzoic acid which enabled them to displace it from its enzyme and stop an essential line of metabolism in the bacterial cell. Experimental support for this hypothesis has been provided by several investigators who have established that p-aminobenzoic acid could antagonise the inhibitory effect of the sulphonamides on the growth of viruses, bacteria, ringi and protozoa.

Page 33.

Though Fildes' hypothesis is generally accepted today, attempts to identify the enzyme system involved in the utilisation of p-aminobenzoic acid have led to inconclusive results. In addition, several other compounds have been found to have an anti-Other theories have, therefore, been prosulphonamide action. posed to explain the action of sulphonamides. These include the "marcotic hypothesis" of Johnson and the "sulphonsmide inhibition of bacterial respiration theory of Sevag. The latter and his co-workers have perhaps struck the severest blow to Fildes' theory by their demonstration that micro-organisms could develop resistance to sulphonamides without synthesizing an increased amount of p-aminobenzoic acid. sternit with the line line

To explain the experimental finding that totally unrelated compounds could under certain circumstances antagonise sulphonamide action on bacteria, Kohn and Harris developed an interesting modification of Fildes' hypothesis. They suggested that p-aminobenzoic acid catalysed the production of various substances (primary reactions), and that these were necessary to promote cell growth and multiplication (secondary reactions). Sulphonemides acted by inhibiting the catalysis of the primary reactions and so led to a drop in the concentration of the substances required for the secondary reactions. Under certain conditions, such as a low concentration of the drug, the direct addition of one of the compounds promoting the secondary reactions might be sufficient to antagonise it. Shen, however, the drug concentration was high, only p-aminobenzoic acid was effective since it restored the primary reactions and all the secondary reactions then followed.

and the second second second second

# CHAFTER II.

# THE DETERMINATION OF

### P-ANINOBENZOIC ACID.

The methods described for the estimation of p-aminobenzoic acid can be divided into two types:

A. Chemical methods.

B. Microbiological methods.

#### A. Chemical Methods.

Since p-aminobenzoic acid is a primary aromatic amine. it is diazotizable. and such a reaction can be used as the basis of one method of estimating its concentration in body fluids and foodstuffs. For example, the method of Bratton and Marchall (1939, for the estimation of sulphonamides, which are also primary aromatic amine derivatives, has been used for the estimation of p-aminobenzoic acid. In this method the sulphonamide is diazotized and coupled in acid solution with dimethyl-x-naphthylamine or with N-(1-naphthyl) ethylenediamine dihydrochloride to form a red pigment. which is determined colorimetrically, Although this test is non-specific since any primary aromatic amine will react. it is stated that the test can be wade specific provided that the different reaction rates of the various diazotized substances, e.g. diagotized aniline, p-aminobenzoic acid and its isomers, sulphonamides and related compounds (Anstacher, 1944, p.240), are taken into account. When, however, an assay of biological fluids for p-aminobenzoic acid is made after feeding or otherwise administering this compound, the objection of non-specificity is not a great one.

eince a control estimation before feeding p-aminobenzoic acid will serve to indicate the presence of any other primary aromatic amine or derivative in that organism. Blanchard (1941) has employed this method for the quantitative determination of p-eminobenzoic acid in yeast. Eckert (1943) has determined the free and conjugated paminobenzoic acid in blood, using a modification of Bratton and Marshall's method, which he claims to be extremely sensitive, and capable of detecting 1 microgram  $(\chi)$  of p-aminobenzoic acid in 0.5 c.c. blood, or 200 micrograms per 100 c.c. blood. More recently, Rose and Bevan(1944) have described a simplified method for the estimation of sulphonamide drugs in blood, urine and other body fluids, using a new coupling component N-B-sulphatoethyl-m-toluidine. None of these methods could be tried here since the reagents were unobtainable.

Another colour reaction for paminobensoic acid was described by Tauber and Lauffer (1941). They showed that on the addition of p-dimethylaminobenzaldehyde to paminobenzoic acid in glacial acetic acid a deep yellow colour developed. They considered that the coloured compound was probably a Schiff base, and found that the isomers of p-aminobenzoic acid and their alkyl esters also gave this test.

The use of p-dimethylaminobenzaldehyde for the determination of sulphonamide drugs had, however, already been advocated by derner (1939) and by Morris (1941). This compound has since been employed by Fuller (1942), using a test-paper method for the estimation of sulphonamides in

Page 36.

laked blood, and the method further modified by La Rose (1943) for the direct analysis of free sulphonamides and other primary amines, including p-aminobenzoic acid, in serum. However, Mawson (1942) pointed out difficulties in the use of this reagent for the estimation of sulphonamides in blood and has described a method to overcome them. I have tried out his method here and found it satisfactory for the concentrations of sulphonamides present in blood during treatment with these drugs (i.e. 5 - 15 mg. per cent.,. It has not been used for the estimation of p-aminobenzoic acid in the experiments reported in this thesis since the minute amounts of p-aminobenzoic acid to be assayed made it essential to use a much more consitive method, but Mawson's method is suitable for the detection of large quantities of p-aminobenzoic acid (5 - 10 mg. %), and is, therefore, being used in experiments investigating the effects of p-aminobenzoic acid in increasing the resistance of animals and man to infections, which are at present in progress.

Kirch and Bergeim (1943, described a method for the determination of p-aminobenzoic acid based on a colour reaction with diazotized thiamins. The smallest amount of p-aminobenzoic acid found to give a colour was about 10 micrograms. This method is applicable to urine, and complete recoveries of known amounts of p-aminobenzoic acid added to urine have been obtained. Free and conjugated p-aminobenzoic acid can be estimated even in the presence of most of the sulphonamides by a variation in this technique.

A procedure which makes use of tyrosinase may also

be employed (Wisansky, Grattan, Gawron and Ansbacher, unpublished data, quoted from Ansbacher 1944, p.240,. When this enzyme catalyses the aerobic oxidation of catechol, a transient pale yellow-green colour is observed. If the medium contains p-aminobenzoic acid, this colour is not noticed, but a red colour is formed. The reaction is sensitive for the colorimetric determination of p-aminobenzoic acid in amounts of as low as 5 -10 micrograms. The same colour is apparently developed, when the system tyrosinase-oxygen is replaced by ceric sulphate, which is said to be easier to obtain and less expensive than the enzyme.

Page 37.

#### B. Elerobiological Methode.

These methods fall into two groups. Group I methods are based upon the antagonism of p-aminobenzoic acid to sulphonamide bacteriostasis, and consist of determining in a simple, entirely synthetic, basal, bacteriological culture medium. to which a known quantity of a sulphonamide has been added, the amount of p-aminobenzoic soid required to allow growth to proceed. Using this as a standard, the amount of p-aminobenzoic acid in the material assayed is These methods have been criticised on then determined. the grounds (a) that sulphonamide antagonism is not due to p-aminobenzoic acid alone, but may result from the presence of many other compounds, as has already been discussed in Chapter I, and also that these methods are felatively insensitive compared to Group II methods, discussed below. AB methods of assay of p-aminobenzoic acid in unknown materials. animal body tissues, fluide, yeasts, etc., they are certainly

unsuitable. Nevertheless, in certain circumstances this objection does not hold. For example, the concentration of p-aminobenzoic acid in a pure solution of this substance can be reliably estimated by such methods. Secondly, after p-aminobenzoic acid has been administered, the increase of sulphonemide-antegonistic substance in, say, the urine can be justifiably considered to be p-aminobenzoic acid. Since the experiments reported in this thesis are mainly concerned with such ciscumstances, it is claimed that the methodof assay used. and described in detail below. is in fact a reliable measure of the p-aminobenzoic acid present. In addition, these methods, based on sulphonamide antagonism, have the great advantage that the constituents of the culture mediums used are inexpensive and easily obtainable in any laboratory. It should also be noted that the more elaborate methods of the second group described below, for which specificity has been claimed, can also be strongly criticised on the basis of recent reports. In fact, no method yet devised for the assay of p-aminobensoic acid. either chemical or microbiological, has been conclusively proved to be absolutely specific.

McLeod (1940) demonstrated the presence of sulphonamideantagonists in extracts of various animal tissues and body fluids. His method consisted of determining the effect of different amounts of the various materials upon the growth of Escherichia coli observed in an inhibitor-free synthetic medium, to which was added an amount of neutral solution of sulphapyridine sufficient to prevent the visible growth of a standard inoculum of the organisms. The usual concentration of sulphapyridine required was 1/20.000 - 1/60,000. Growth was estimated by observing the presence or absence of gross turbidity after incubation for 24 hours at  $37^{\circ}$ C. The synthetic medium alone, plus inoculum of E. coli, served as the control. Ey varying the concentration of sulphapyridine, differences in the amount of antagonist present could be estimated.

A modification of McLeod's method has been employed in these experiments. McLeod gives no figures for the sensitivity of his method since, as has already been mentioned, he did not know that the sulphonamide-antagonists he measured consisted mainly, if not entirely, of p-aminobenzoic acid. The modification used here permitted the detection of 1 microgram of p-aminobenzoic acid in the volume of material assayed, and a later change in the basal medium used increased the sensitivity to 0.2 micrograms.

<u>Group II methods</u> are based upon the fact that p-aminobenzoic acid is a growth factor for certain bacteria which are unable to synthesize p-aminobenzoic acid and which will not grow unless p-aminobenzoic acid is added to the medium. Rubbonand Gillespie (1940, showed that p-aminobenzoic acid and its derivatives acted as growth factors for an anaerobic bacillus, Glostridium acetobutylicum. In a further paper Rubbo, Maxwell, Pairbridge and Gillespie (1941, developed this finding into a microbiological assay for p-aminobenzoic acid. They found that CL. acetobutylicum required a factor for growth conforming to the structural pattern of a di-substituted benzene ring in which the substituents occupied the 1:4 positions. Optimal activity was developed when the substituents were an amino-group on the one hand and a carboxyl-group on the other. P-aminobenzoic acid was found to stimulate growth in concentrations of 1.46 x  $10^{-10}$ M, i.e. approximately.002 micrograms per 100 c.c. of solution. Park and Wood (1942), however, found that p-aminobenzoic acid alone was insufficient to cause growth of Cl.acetobutylicum and that biotin was required in addition. McIlwain (1942a, used the same organism in a different medium (plus biotin) and found the method of assay satisfactory. He showed that methionine, which is known to antagonise sulphonamide-inhibition of E. coli, did not promote growth of Cl.acetobutylicum.

Landy and Dicken (1942) developed a new microbiological assay method based upon the growth response of Acetobacter suboxydans to p-aminobenzoic acid, which they claimed to be rapid, accurate and specific. The turbidity resulting from the growth of the bacteria was measured in a photoelectric colorimeter. They reported, however, aceay values of a group of compounds derived from or related to p-aminobenzoic acid, which showed that the method could not be considered strictly specific for p-aminobenzoic acid, although relatively very large quantities of the latter compounds were needed to give a positive result. This method has been used by several other investigators.

In the same year Lewis (1942) described another assay method based upon the growth factor activity of p-aminobenzoic acid for Lactobacillus arabinosus. The Lastobacillus methods, which are used also for the assay of various members of the vitamin B complex, offer the great advantage that a chemical titration can be substituted for an estimation of growth and turbidity. At the end of the growth period allowed the lactic acid which is formed by the bacillus during growth is titrated and affords a simpler, more sensitive and exact index of the quantity of p-aminobenzoic acid present than does turbidity estimated visually. The keliability of Lewis' method is indicated by reproducibility of assays, by agreement of assay values obtained with various levels of added samples, and by recoveries of p-aminobenzoic acid added to various samples. The method is very sensitive, the assay range being 0.00015 to 0.0005 micrograms.

Tage 41.

Beadle and Tatum (1941) discovered and maintained X-ray induced mutant strains of the mould Neurospora crassa which were characterised by their inability to carry out specific biochemical processes. One of these mutant strains was apparently unable to synthesize p-aminobenzoic acid and could not grow until p-aminobenzoic acid was added to the medium. Hence p-aminobenzoic acid becomes a growth factor for the "aminobenzoic-less" mutant strain of Neurospora. Tatum and Readle (1942), following up these very interesting findings. showed that the growth of the mutant strain of Neurospora was a function of the amount of p-aminobenzoic scid supplied. They consider that the mutant differed from the normal strain only by a single gane which must, therefore, control an essential step in the synthesis of p-aminobenzoic acid, and which was presumably primarily concerned only with the synthesis of p-aminobenzoic acid. A number of substances related to paminobenzoic acid were, however, able to replace it. but their activities were much less than that of p-aminobenzoic acid

itself. These authors further described a method of measuring the growth of the mould. Mitchell, Isbell and Thompson (1943, employed this mutant strain in a microbiological assay method for p-aminobengoic acid, and determined the p-aminobengoic acid content in various natural substances. Their results suggest that the method of Landy and Dickeh (1942) determined only a fraction of the total amount of p-aminobenzoic acid present. In a further paper, Thompson, Isbell and Mitchell (1943) claimed that their method had a high specificity and a sensitivity of .004 - .04 micrograms. The method is rapid (20 hours' incubation at 30°C.) and the results reproducible. These authors employed a different method of estimating the growth of Neurospora crassa to that of Tatum and Beadle.

rege 42.

Mirick (1943) presented still snother method for quantitatively estimating small amounts of p-aminobenzoic acid. utilising his soil bacillus of the Freudomonaceae family, which was specifically adapted to produce enzymes capable of oxidiaing p-aminobenzoic acid apparently to carbon dioxide. water and ammonia (Mirick, 1941). For this bacillus, p-aminobenzoic acid was neither a growth factor nor was it released into the medium in which the bacillus was cultured, but on the other hand it was completely destroyed by the bacillus. The quantity of primary aromatic amins in the solution was determined by adiazotization technique before and after the action of the soil bacillus, the difference being the guantity of p-aminobenzoic acid present. The specific adaptive enzymes of this soil bacillus may be used for the identification of quantities down to 10 micrograms of p-aminobensoic acid. Denzoic acia, snows that the simple basal medium used does

The limitation in sensitivity of the method was shown to be due to the relative insensitivity of the diazo reaction as compared to the other microbiological methods. Nevertheless, this method appears to possess a specificity greater than any yet described. Mirick also discussed in his paper the other microbiological techniques of this group already described and severely criticised their so-called specificity.

#### SELECTION OF ABGAY METHOD FOR F-AMINOBENZOIC ACID.

The microbiological method used for the estimation of p-aminobenzoic acid in the experiments described in this thesis has been selected for the following reasons:-

(1, Availability of the reagents required for the culture media. 'For every other method described above a few, usually several, of the reagents required could not be obtained despite strenuous efforts.'

(2) Despite the fallacy of considering all sulphonamide-antagonists to be p-aminobenzoic acid, it was felt that this objection was not a valid one when pure solutions of p-aminobenzoic acid and its derivatives were measured or when its excretion in the urine after feeding was estimated, since a control experiment on the material assayed was always carried out before p-aminobenzoic acid was administered. / A consideration of the work reported so far (a) on substances which act synergistically with p-aminobenzoic acid in antagoniaing sulphonamides and (b) on sulphonamide-antagonists which are produced in a medium on the addition of p-aminobenzoic acid, shows that the simple basal medium used does

#### Page 43.

Page 44.

not contain any substance which may introduce an error on these grounds. In fact, many of the more elaborate microbiological experiments described under B, Group II above, employ media containing various amino-acids, purines and members of the vitamin B complex, some of which have already been shown, particularly by Sevag et al , to influence the antagonism of p-aminobenzoic acid to sulphonamides, and others have not as yet been tested. It is probable, therefore, that these substances influence the action of p-aminobenzoic acid as a growth factor on the test organism used, so that this objection holds throughout all the assay procedures yet described, with the possible exception of Mirick's (1943) method.

The greatest objection to the method used in these experiments, which could only be partly remedied, is its relative insensitivity as compared to the other group of microbiological methods described. Euring the course of these experiments the method used was improved so as to increase its sensitivity from measuring a minimum of 1 microgram in the volume of material added to the medium to 0.2 micrograms, but this is not sufficiently sensitive to measure the quantity of p-aminobensoic acid in normal urine which is of the order of 0.02 micrograms/c.c. However, by concentrating normal urine to 1/10 and 1/100 of its volume, the quantity of p-aminobensoic acid present could be estimated. Mevertheless, this technique is too laborious to make it practicable as a routine procedure and it has only been used in a few experiments.

#### DESCRIPTION OF MIGROPICLOGICAL METHOD USED FOR THE ESTIMATION OF P-AMINOBENZOIC ACID.

/Modified from McLeod (1940,7.

#### Frinciple

A synthetic culture medium which supports the growth of Escherichia coli is prepared. To it is added sufficient sulphapyridine to prevent growth of the organism. The material to be assayed for p-aminobenzoic acid is added and the amount required to neutralise the action of sulphapyridine is compared with a standard solution of p-aminobenzoic acid. The quantity of p-aminobenzoic acid present can then be calculated.

Basal Culture Medium.

The synthetic medium used was that developed by Sahyum, Beard, Schultz, Snow and Cross (1936,, and consists of :-Ammonium sulphate 4.72 grammes. 2.0 graumee. Asparagine Sodium Chloride 5.0 grammes. Glucose 2.0 grammes. KHOFOL (M/S) 100 c.c. NEOH, (N/1, 16.4 C. C. MgClo; FeClo; CaClo(1% mixture 1.0 cc.

Distilled water to 1000 c.c.

pH adjusted to 7.6. Tubed in 4.c.c. quantities and sterilised in the autoclave at 5 lbs. pressure for 30 minutes. Culture of E. coli.

A strain of E. coli obtained from a specimen of faeces was transferred on to Loffler's serum medium. Stock cultures

Page 45.

were kept in the smooth phase on this medium, stored in the refrigerator and usually subcultured on to fresh Loffler's medium at 4-weekly intervals. Since on two occasions 8-week old cultures were used, experiments were carried out to determine whether the duration of cold storage of the stock culture had any deleterious effect on the growth of the organism. These experiments are not reported in detail, but within the maximum period (8 weeks) at which subcultures were made flow the stock culture, no difference was noted.

At the outset, this strain of 8. coli would not grow when transferred from the stock Loffler's medium to the above basal medium. McLeod (1940) apparently experienced a similar difficulty since he later added a casein hydrolysate known to be free of sulphonamide-antagonistic material to his medium and claimed that this modification ensured an optimum growth rate. An attempt was first made here to improve the basal medium used in the same way, namely by the addition of a vitamin-free casein hydrolysate, (kindly supplied by Dr. L. Goldberg of the S.A.I.M.R. ) Unfortunately this preparation was not free of sulphonamide-antagonistic substances, and produced variable growth in the basal medium even after the addition of considerably larger amounts of sulphapyridine than that used below. The problem was, therefore, tackled in other ways and was finally solved by subculturing the strain of E. coli used several times from one Loffler's medium to another after 24 hours incubation each time, and inoculating tubes of basal medium with heavy suspensions of organisms from each subculture. The basal

18. e 47.

medium tubes were then incubated for 24 hours at  $37^{\circ}$ C. and subcultures were then again made from each basal medium tube on to fresh Loffler's medium. From the first three of these basal mediums no growth developed on the Loffler's subculture, showing that the organisms had died out, but from the fourth basal medium tube, a poor growth was obtained on the Loffler's medium after 24 hours incubation. This growth was now inoculated back and forth from basal medium to Loffler's medium at 24-hourly intervals (during which time it was kept at 37°C) and it was noted that auccessive inoculations into the basal medium produced heavier and heavier growths. Finally, maximal growth in the bagal medium was produced after 24 hours with the size of inoculum detailed below, this quantity then being used as a standard inoculum throughout the experiments reported. The organism thus apparently had adapted itself to an existence on a poorly nutrient medium and had accustomed itself to the use of relatively simple nutrients. Simultaneously with this adoptation, another phenomenon was observed. With repeated subcultures, the quantity of paminobenzoic acid required by the organism to neutralise added sulphonamice gradually diminished. In experiment I a few results of typical experiments done are recorded. These show that whereas at the outset of this work 2.5 micrograms of p-aminobenzoic acid were required to neutralise the 1/25.000 sulphapyridine added (= 200 micrograms of sulphapyridine) and allow growth of the organism to proceed, only 1 microgram of p-aminobenzoic acid was required six months later. Then the basal medium used was modified at about

this time by the inclusion of ammonium phosphate  $(NH_{ij})_2HPO_{ij}$ as the source of nitrogen in place of asparagine, which became unobtainable, (glucose was retained as the source of carbon), the sensitivity of the method was further improved, and 0.2 micrograms of p-aminobenzoic acid was found to neutralise the 200 micrograms of sulphapyridine added. From this stage no further alteration in the p-aminobenzoic acid requirements was noted. It should be noted that when calculating the quantity of p-aminobenzoic acid present in the solution or urine assayed, the figures quoted in the various experiments recorded were derived by reference to a known paminobenzoic acid solution simultaneously tested.

Page 48.

#### Inoculum.

A subculture on Loffler's serum was made and incubated at 37°C. for 24 hours. The resulting growth was washed off with 10 c.c. of sterile normal saline and centrifused at 3000 r.p.m. until the sediment was firmly packed down. The supernatant saline solution was decanted off completely and the sediment resuspended in 20 c.c. sterile saline. Thia washing of the bacterial suspension was carried out as a routine since, if the original suspension of organisms from the Loffler's elope was used, growth with the size of inoculum used sometimes occurred in the basal medium with 1/25000 sulphapyridine added. This was considered to be due to one or both of the following causes: (a) the bacteria growing on the Loffler's medium synthesize p-aminobenzoic acid which is present in the saline suspension and neutralise the sulphapyridine, hence allowing growth to proceed and (b) that other sulphonamide-antagonist substances present in the Loffler's

serum medium or water of condensation, e.g. peptones, described in Chapter I, neutralise the sulphapyridine and hence allow growth to proceed. hen the saline used to wash the organisms off the 'offler's slope was decanted off the well-centrifuged organisms, and the latter re-suspended in fresh, sterile, normal saline, trouble was only very occasionally encountered. One drop of this washed bacterial suspension (approximately 0.05 c.c.) was added to the culture medium (L c.c.). After addition of the volume of the material to be assayed, sterile, normal saline was added to the medium to make a total volume of 5 c.c. At the outset attempts were made to standardise, as most workers have done, the volume of bacterial inoculum, i.e. the number of organisms added by comparing the turbidity of the suspension with Brown's standard opacity tubes, but preliminary experiments (not quoted in detail) indicated that the number of bacteria could be varied fairly considerably without influencing the end result, since estimations of presence or absence of growth was made visually and not by a photo-electric method. Rohn and Earris (1941, obtained quantitative data on the growth of E. coli in different media in the presence and absence of sulphonamides, and reported that the size of the inoculum had no real effect on the results. The apparent effect they found to be due to the limitations of the medium and the time course of the inhibition. Large inocula (above 76,000 organisme, exhaust the medium and cease growth within 6 - 7 hours. The inoculum used in the following experiments exceeded this figure, as estimated by comparison with Drown's opacity tubes. Further, since the degree of growth was only

1

estimated roughly as <u>elight</u>, <u>moderate</u> or <u>maximal</u> growth, or <u>no growth</u>, it was decided not to measure very accurately the size of the inoculum used. All volumes were added from sterile pipettes kept in a sterile copper pipette container. <u>Addition of Sulphapyridine</u>.

The optimal concentration of sulphapyridine required was estimated in preliminary experiments and this concentration kept constant throughout the experiments. It was found that a final concentration of 1/25.000 sulphapyridine was the minimal quantity required to ensure that no growth would occur with the above inoculum until p-aminobenzoic acid was added. Kohn and Harris (1941) plotted the relationship between rate of growth and drug relationship, and found this to be a simple one in a salt-glucose medium such as the above. A stock 0.025% solution of sulphapyridine in distilled water was then prepared and 200 c.c. added to the constituents of the basal medium above, the final volume being again made up with distilled water to 1000 c.c. . This medium was again and tubed in 4.c.c.-quantities,/these tubes distinguished from tubes of the basal medium by inserting a blue glass bead in each tube, whereas the basal medium tubes contained a yellow glass bead. The concentration of sulphapyridine in the basal medium is, therefore, 1/20.000. After addition of the test solution, the final volume was made up to 5.co. in which, therefore, the sulphapyridine concentration is 1/25000 (i.e. 200 micrograms in 5.cc.) Active and Inactive forms of P-aminobenzoic acid.

antagonists in various tissues, that much of the antagonistic

Page 51.

substance is present in some bound. inactive form, since its amount apparently increased greatly when autolysis of the tissue was allowed to take place. He also found that some tissues. for example fresh liver and kidney, were free of active substance, although this became demonstrable after autolysis of these organs had taken place. Similar results were obtained if acid hydrolysis of the tissue was first performed. The "bound" sulphonamide antagonist was, therefore, split by such procedures. It should be noted that MoLeod also found that, whereas normal human urine contained little or no active entegonist, this was uniformly present after acid hydrolysis. I have been unable to confirm this observation despite numerous assays of normal urins in the course of the experiments reported. Indeed, it is difficult to agree with McLeod's observation. since the technique he adopted is certainly not censitive enough to react to the presence of 0.02 micrograms of p-aminobengoic acid in the urine, which is the upper limit of the range found by the more elaborate and very sensitive micro-biological techniques described above. When the urine was concentrated 100 times, as described in experiment 7 - p-aminobenzoic acid in the conjugated form was found to be present in an amount similar to that found by other investigators. Zandy and Dicken (1942), Lewis (1942), Thompson, Isbell and Mitchell (1943.7. With the development of wood and Pildes' essential metabolite theory and the correlation of p-aminobenzoic acid with sulphonamide antagonism, the probability that the bound, inactive form of sulphonamide-antagonist was an acetylated derivative of paminobenzoic acid was shown by various workers. It has been

Fage 52.

known for a long time that metabolic acetylation of aminogroups, probably by the liver, is a common "detoxication" reaction carried out by the body, the acetylated derivative being then excreted in the urine.

One must, however, consider the possibility that paminobenzoic acid could be excreted in the urine combined in other ways. In theoretical grounds, in addition to the acetylated derivative, p-acetyl-aminobensoic acid, it could be excreted, conjugated either with glycuronic acid as paminobenzoyl glycuronate or with glycine as p-amino-henzoyl glycine or p-amino hippuric acid. Harrow, Mezur and Sherwin (1933) fed relatively large quantities of p-aminobenzoic acid to a rabbit (1-2 gms) and by extraction of the urine were able to recover sufficient material to show that about 25.0 of the p-aminobenzoic acid fed was excreted by the rabbit in the acetylated form. They also found that some of the p-aminobenzoic acid was excreted as the glycuronate, since after removing the acetylated form with other, the residue gave a very striking colour test with naphthorecordinol. Quick (1932) had already drawn attention to the fact that nearly all workers had either underestimated or entirely ignored the possibility that aromatic acids may be combined with glycuronic acid. The glycuronic acid union with an promatic acid is comparatively labile and unless special 10.00 precautions are taken it is readily hydrolyced. No reports have appeared in the literature to my knowledge, concerning the possible conjugation of p-aminobenzoic acid with glycine. although the excretion of p-amino hippuric acid and p-acetylazinohippuric acid has been shown by Finkelstein, Aliminosa

and Smith (1941) to be very repid.

Page 53.

As far as acetylation is concerned, many other studies have appeared during the last 30 years in addition to those by Sherwin and co-workers, investigating this phenomenon. Many of these studies have been published in German journals. Anabacher (1944, p.226) has reviewed this field and concluded that the major part of the acetyl groups employed for detoxication of p-aminobensoic acid seemed to be obtained from metabolic processes, combined with phosphate as acetylphosphate. When acetic acid itself was fed, very little or none was used for acetylating purposes.

Etrauss, Lowell and Finland (1941) found that following ingestion of 1 - 4 g. of p-swinobenzoic sold by human subjects, the conjugation began early and progressed rapidly. Urinary excretion was rapid and largely completed in 12hours, about 2/3 of the drug being excreted in the "free" form. Other workers have found that the proportion of free or active psminobenzoic acid was very much less. The discrepancy may lie in the fact that Strauss. Lowell and Finland (1941) fed massive doses which probably exceeded the ability of the organism to conjugate it. When minute amounts are fed. which are more in keeping with the possible vitemin character of p aminobenzoic acid. the experiments quoted below indicate that p-aminobenzoic acid could only be recovered in the conjugated form. Lewis (1942) reported that in the case of urine the percentage of inactive p-aminobenzoic acid may be as high as 96<sup>4</sup>. Methods of Converting the Inactive to the Active Form.

Before hydrolysis, the inactive form of p-aminobenzoic

Fase 54.

acid in the urine neither supports growth of the micro-organiem used nor is it diagotizable, indicating that the primary amine group is not free. Acid or alkaline hydrolysis has been employed by various workers to convert the inactive to the active form. The method used in this thesis was modified from that of McLeod (1940). In preliminary experiments. Releod's technique was followed and sufficient ECL was added to the solution to be hydrolysed so that the final concentration of HCl was 0.2 N HCl. (This meant the addition of 1 drop concentrated HCl to 10 c.c. solution or urine ... The solution was then heated in a boiling water-bath for 45 minutes. neutralised with 40% NaOH, and then sterilised by heating in boiling water-bath for another 30 minutes. However, it soon became obvious that further quantities of p-aminobenzoic acid could be liberated by making the solution more acid, this finally becoming maximal when the hydrolysis was carried out at a pH of 0.5-1. The modified technique then employed for all experiments was as follows: To 10 c.c. of solution or urine enough concentrated HCl was added to bring the pH to Usually 5-6 drops of acid were sufficient. It 1 or less. was then heated in a boiling water-bath for 60 minutes, cooled, nautralised corefully with 40% NaCH to a pH of approximately 7 (4-5 drops usually required) and the neutralised colution then sterilised by heating in a boiling waterbath for 30 minutes. The volume of acid and dell added introduces an error of approximately 5-10%, for which no correction was made, since the method of assay itself has certainly a greater error. while these experiments were in progress, other methods of hydrolysis wers reported.

Thus Lewis (1942, used alkaline hydrolysis, McIlwain (1942) found that the optimal conditions for liberating the bound acid was autoclaving the solution at 120° for 20 minutes, using 0.1 ml. of concentrated HCl for every 1 gm. of solution or solid material, and Thompson, Isbell and Mitchell (1943, reported that hydrolysis with 6K sulphuric acid was required to produce a maximal yield by their method. Their procedure was to add 5 ml. of 6N HoSOL per g. of material, autoclave the mixture for 1 hour at 15 lbs. pressure and then nearly neutralise the sulphuric acid with barium carbonate. The precipitated barium sulphate and the undigested material they removed by filtration and adjusted the pH to neutrality with amonium hydroxide. They also reported that during hydrolysis there was a partial destruction of pure p-aminobenasic acid averaging +15% by all methods. For uniformity in the results reported in this thesis, it was decided to retain the original method since the limits of sensitivity of the method are such that maximum hydrolysis appeared to have been reached as shown experimentally by the procedure used. ACTIVE AND INACTIVE FORMS OF P-AMINGRENZOIC ACID EXCRETED IN NORMAL URINE.

1666 55.

It was thought of interest to determine in what form the minute amounts of p-aminobenzoic acid are excreted under normal conditions or when very small amounts are fed as may occur, for example, in consuming an ordinary dist. No direct observations have been carried out on this problem. Harrow, Mazur and herwin's (1933, observations were made after feeding large, almost toxic, doses and under "physiological conditions there is no certainty that p-aminobenzoic acid is excreted as the acetyl-derivative, although this has

been tacitly assumed by all workers. Since it is impracticable to extract the minute amounts present under normal conditions and since this would require very large amounts of urine and extraction solvents. it was thought that an indirect procedure based on the following considerations might throw light on the problem. If pure solutions, of the order of 1 microgram/c.c. of p-aminobenzoic acid and its derivatives, were subjected to the conditions of hydrolysis and assay procedure described above, that derivative which duplicates most closely the results obtained when wrine is tested after administering p-sminobenzoic acid by mouth should be identical with or closely related to the form in which p-aminobenzoic acid is excreted under natural conditions. Therefore, several derivatives of p-aminobenzoic acid were tested as described below in experiment 2. In theoretical grounds, p-acetyl-aminobenzoic acid, p-aminohippuric acid and p-amino-benzoyl glycuronate are the most likely derivatives excreted. The former two were synthesized, but the glycuronate could not be prepared since glycuronic acid could not be obtained, and the difficulties involved in synthesizing it were considered to be too great here. This compound could not, therefore, be tested, but Quick's (1932) observations indicate. however, that glycuronates are so unstable that they are hydrolysed on boiling the test solution even in neutral solution. Since neutralised samples of all the urines tested were always heated as controls when acidified samples were hydrolysed, and since no p-aminobenzoic acid was found in such specimens, the inference is drawn that very little, if any, of the

Page 56.

rege 57.

p-aminobenzoic acid is excreted as the glycuronate. In the other hand, it should be noted that the amount of "free" paminobenzoic acid found by other more sensitive methods — e.g. Lewis' (1942, method showed that 4, of the p-aminobenzoic acid excreted in the urine was in the "free" form — could actually be p-aminobenzoic acid "bound" as glycuronate, since autoclaving of the urine for sterilisation is, according to Quick, sufficient to hydrolyse the glycuronate.

It seems to me, therefore, that the possibility that all the p-aminobenzoic acid excreted in the urine under normal conditions is actually "bound" or conjugated is a very real one, and one which has been overlooked by all other workers in this field. This theory would explain a point that puzzled me from the outset of this work - namely, the reason for the fact that with the minute quantities of p-aminobenzoic acid excreted in a normal individual, part of it should have escaped the detoxication mechanisms of the body. My suggestion is that under physiological conditions all the p-aminobensoic acid excreted is "bound", the so-called "free" paminobenzoic acid being p-aminobenzoic acid combined as p-aminobenzoyl glycuronate and the so-called "bound" p-aminobenzoic acid being combined as p-acetylaminobenzoic acid. since experiment 2 shows that p-acetylaminobenzoic acid hehaves exactly like the form in which p-aminobenzoic acid is excreted naturally. The other derivatives of p-aminobenzoic acid tested in experiment 2 were readily obtainable since they are used as local anaesthetics, and have been included for comparative purposes. When large quantities are fed as by Harrow, Mazur and Wherwin (1933) it is probable that some

p-aminobenzoic acid is excreted actually as p-aminobenzoic acid. It is significant, however, that these workers were able to demonstrate that some of the p-aminobenzoic acid fed was actually excreted, nonjugated with glycuronic acid, so that there seems to be every reason that similar conditions hold for small quantities of p-aminobenzoic acid.

Under diseased conditions it becomes possible that even minute amounts of p-aminobenzoic acid may be excreted unchanged, and since this is most likely to occur in discases of the liver, some cases of liver disease were investigated and reported in experiment 9. It will be seen that the liver damage must be extreme before the proportion of "free" p-aminobenzoic acid increases when 25 mgms. are fed. In such patients presumably the detoxicating power of the liver has become impaired. Incidentally, the value of applying this finding to the development of a liver function test is nil for practical purposes, since the presence of liver disease is obvious clinically when the liver can still conjugate the small amounts of p-aminobenzoic acid administered. The use of larger doses is not helpful since. firstly, these doses may be toxic and, secondly, when doses even of 100 mg. ard given, "free" p-aminobenzoic acid is excreted by the normal individual. 1 10 19 1

Preparation of P-Aminobenzoic Acid.

Since only a few grammes of p-aminobenzoic acid were available, the preparation of sufficient quantities for these experiments was undertaken. Fortunately, esters of p-aminobenzoic acid, which are local anaesthetics, could be obtained and two of these have been hydrolyzed - namely

1 12 14 15 1 4

Page 59.

procaine hydrochloride which was available at the outset of this work, and benzocaine which became available later. The preparation from benzocaine is much simpler, more rapid and gives a much higher yield of a purer product. Most of the p-aminobenzoic acid used in the experiments to be described was prepared from procaine and this method is, therefore, described first.

Preparation of P-Aminobenzoie Acid from Procaine Hydrochloride.

225 g. of procaine hydrochloride (novocaine hydrochloride, p-amino-benzoyl-diethyl-amino-ethapl) NH2.C6H4. C.O.C.CH2CH2N(C2H)2.HCl. 500 c.c. water.

1000 c.c. rectified spirits.

300 g. sodium hydroxide.

were mixed in a 4-litre flask. In addition of the NaCH a solid mass of procaine separated out. The mixture was boiled under reflux and the solid mass gradually redissolved, and the solution took on a yellowish-brown colour. The hydrolysis was considered complete when all the solid matter had redissolved and required 4 days. (The prolonged boiling in an alkaline solution probably caused considerable destruction of the p-aminobenzoic acid and would account for the relatively poor yield). The solution was then allowed to cool and the bulk of the ethyl alcohol distilled off. A heavy, oily liquid separated from the solution in a layer at the bottom. This layer, which was removed in a separating funnel, was probably largely the disthylamino-sthewol fraction. The remainder of the solution was meutralized with concentrated HCl, and when it was acid to litrus a yellowish-brown

precipitate separated out. This was filtered off on a Fuchner with suction. the filtrate again acidified with a small quantity of acid. when a further precipitate separated out. and this was again filtered off. These procedures were continued until no further precipitate formed. The combined precipitates were washed three times with cold water. dried and then extracted with hot alcohol which dissolved the paminobenzoic acid. leaving solid NaCl which was filtered off. The filtrate was evaporated to dryness, the crude p-aminobenzoic acid redissolved in a dilute sodium bicarbonate solution and filtered off. The filtrate was then again acidified with concentrated HCL, and the precipitated p-aminobensoic acid filtered off on a Euchner with suction and crystallised from hot alcohol. The product was finally re-crystallised from hoyalcohol. Yield 45 gms. (Theoretical 113 gms.) M.P. (uncorrected) 184-185°C. A mixed melting-point with a small quantity of pure p-aminobensoic acid available (M.P. 185-6°) was done. Mixed M.P. (uncorrected) 184°C. Hence considered that product was pure enough. although it was darker in colour than pure product available and product obtained by the hydrolysis of benzocaine described below, probably due to prolonged initial hydrolysis in alkaline solution.

Preparation of P-Aminobenzoic Acid from Benzocaine. Quantities of 200 g. benzocaine (ethyl-p-amino-benzo@afne, NH2. C6H4. COOC2H5; 1000 c.c. water. 1000 c.c. rectified spirits. 30 g. sodium hydroxide

Page 61.

were mixed in a 4-litre flask and boiled under reflux for 1-2 hours. The solution soon changes to a light yellow colour. hydrolysia being very rapid. The solution is then cooled and neutralised with concentrated HCl until just acid to litmus. This required 30-h0 c.c. of conc. HCl. The alcohol was then distilled off under greatly reduced pressure until the volume was  $\pm 1/3$  of original. The boiling point was kept low so as to minimise destruction of the p-aminobenzoic acid. On cooling the concentrated solution, p-aminobenzoic acid crystallised out in long needle-like crystals which were filtered off on the Euchner funnel with suction, and then dried in the oven at about 7000. The filtrate from this first crystallisation was brownish in colour and still contained by far the greater part of the p-aminobenzoic acid. This was precipitated out by making the solution progreasively more acid. filtering off the solid separating out each time on the addition of a volume of 25-30 c.c. of concentrated HCL, and continuing thus to a final pH of 3-4 after which no more p-aminobenzoic acid separated out. The combined precipitates were dried in an oven at about  $70^{\circ}$ C. and the p-aminobensoic acid separated from the solid NaCl, which had also partly precipitated out, by dissolving it in hot alcohol, and filtering. Impure p-aminobenzoic acid crystallised from the filtrate and was re-crystallised from a minimum volume of hot water leaving behind an oily residue, probably aniline. Yield 60-70%. Melting point (uncorrected, 185-6°C. Mixed M.P. with a known sample of pure p-aminobenzoic acid 185-186°C. (uncorrected). The

re-crystallised product was, therefore, pure p-aminobenzoic acid.

#### Experiment I.

Estimation of Fensitivity of Assay Method.

Varying quantities of a solution of pure p-aminobenzoic acid were added to 4 c.c. basal medium plus sulphapyridine. and volume made up to 5 c.c. with sterile saline. Final concentration of sulphapyridine 1/25,000. A suspension of E. coli., prepared as described above, added and solution incubated for 24 hours. Bource of nitrogen in basal medium was asparagine.

Typical Experiments.

31.3.44. P-Aminobenzoic acid solution used 10micrograms/c.c. All tests in duplicate.

After 24 hours; Controls. Basal medium alone - maximum growth. Incubation ;

	ity of p-aminobenzoic Gro added to Basal Medium 24 5000 Sulphapyridine.	wth after hours.
Mark . C. Lat 1	FOR CONTRACTOR STATES	Nil.
$(-\alpha) \cos (\phi)$	0.1 c.c. = 1 microgram	
Deletter tagg	0.25c.c. = 2.5	Moderate.
	0.5 c.c. = 5	"."hu 23%.
	0.75c.c. = 7.5	Zaximal.
	1 c.c. =10 "	B Seleverent, 279.
Annual Annua	· · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · ·	

<u>17.10.44.</u> P-aminobenzoic acid solution used 5 micrograms/cc. All tests in duplicate. Experimental details as before.

TALE 65.

							basal	medium	W&8	asparagin	0.	
	è	•		N	19	12	ιŧ	4.8	H A	atmonium	phosph	ate.
è	_	GI	uantity	of	p-sminob sal Mediu	enz	Dic ac	1 <b>d</b>	G	rowth afte	r 24 h	ours.
		6	udad ro	E:EA	ERT WEATO	(84) ······	~ ~ ~ ~ ~ ~ ~ ~ ~ ~ ~ ~ ~ ~ ~ ~ ~ ~ ~	.42°,		A	В.	

sulphapy	ridine.		
o		P11	Nil.
0.1 mic	rograme	Slight	Slight.
0.2	article and the state	Slight	Maximal.
0.3	<b>u</b>	19	-
0.5		74	<b>49</b>
0.7	"	**	*8
1.0		Maximal	58
1.5	a lastic destruit	79	18
2.5	and a strange of the second second	42	18
	The billing of the second s	And the second	

Experiment 2. Behaviour of p-aminobensoic acid and various of its derivatives when tested under the assay conditions used. Test Medium: Basal medium + 1/25000 sulphapyridine.

Inoculum: As described above.

Method of Hydrolysis: As described above.

Incubated for 24 hours.

and the state

741" 6 3 mg ......

Substances tested: (1) F-aminobenzoic acid.

NH2.C6H4.COOK. Mol.weight. 137.

\* (2) p-acetylamino-benzoic acid.

CH3.CO.NH. C6H4. COUH. Mol.weight.179.

X (3) p-amino-hippuric acid.

NH206H4.CO.NH.CH2.COOH. Hol.weight 194.

x (4, Benzocaine-ethyl p-amino-benzoate. NH<sub>2</sub>.C<sub>6</sub>H<sub>4</sub>. COOC<sub>2</sub>H<sub>5</sub> Nol.weight 165.

- x (5) p-aminobenzoyldiethyl-aminoethanol hydrochloride (Novocaine,) Frocaine).
  NH<sub>2</sub>.C<sub>6</sub>H<sub>4</sub>.CO.O.CH<sub>2</sub>.CH<sub>2</sub>.N(C<sub>2</sub>H<sub>5/2</sub>.HCl. Mol. weight 272.5
- x (6, 4-butyl-aminobenzoyl dimethyl- )C4H9.NH.C6H4.CO.O.CH2.CH2.N(CH3)2 HCL. amino-ethanol hydrochloride (Decicaine, anto- ) caine;

Two sterile solutions of each of above substances (1 - (6))prepared so that their concentrations, estimated as p-aminobenzoic acid, were 5 micrograms/c.c. and 1 microgram/c.c. Varying quantities as below added to test medium (basal medium + 1/25000 sulphapyridine, and volumes made up to 5c.c. ,

#### Preparation of p-Acetyl-aminobenzoic acid.

3 g. of p-aminobenzoic acid was discolved in a small volume of puridine. 2 mols of acetic anhydride added and the mixture boiled gently under reflux for 10 minutes. It was then poured into a beaker of melting ice and acidified with conc. HCl until the solution was acid to litmus. By vigorous actatching of the sides of the beaker with a glass rod, a precipitate of p-acetylaminobenzoic acid separated out which was filtered off, and after washing with cold water. was re-dissolved in hot water, and a little charcoal added to decolorise the solution, which was then again filtered. After evaporating the filtrate on a steam bath until the p-acetylaminobenzoic acid began forming a layer on top of the colution. it was set aside to cool slowly. Long needle-like crystals of p-acetylaminobenzoic acid formed. These were filtered off on the suction pump. dried at 37°C. overnight, and the melting-point determined. Yield 1 gramme. M.F. (uncorrected 252°C. (The M.F.given for p-acetylaminobenzoic acid by various authors is 250-252°C.

x p-Amino-hippuric acid kindly supplied by Dr.L.Golberg of B.A. Institute of Medical Research.

Unhydrolysed Substance.	Growth	on adding	quantity	in	micrograms st	stated to	to test medium.	•	
	0.2	0.4	0.6	0.8	<b>H</b>	2	3	F	
-Amino-		4 		4 1 1 1 1	s ) States	) A	i cranita i cran	1	
acid a	Maximal.	Eax.	Hax.	Max.	E. Max.	Max.	Nex.	Hax.	Hax.
p-Acetyl- aminobenzoic acid.	<b>N11.</b>	<b>N11</b>	<b>11</b>	N11	N11	N11	Slight	BLI	\$2
p-Amino- hippurie				2 4 7 7 7					en en
1. 1. 1. 1. 1. 1. 1. 1. 1. 1. 1. 1. 1. 1	r				4), (n.)		10 x 4.11, X-13		Sht
Benzocaine	Slight	Slight	Slight	<b>N11</b>	Moder- ate.	Kođ.	R.	Kex .	Ex.
Novoraine	Slight	M11	Rex.	Hax.	MBX.	Max.	Max.	liax.	Max
Decicaine				-	Here Here			Ther Trans	

	ŕ.		× • • •			1 4 M		5 12	the state of the
57-14	<del>ارد ار</del> معو اسر	Hod.	alight	E L	111		111	Glight	becleaine
	No.	•	aax.	Jax.	Eax.	ABX.	Hax.	213116	Tovocaine
	2 5 6		432				4 	ete.	і н. С. С.
il.	Hex	•	Max.	Fax.	Fax.	Max.	Max.	Hoder-	penzocalne
			11	0	27 E.	(S.).			
		natura de las		19 <u>2</u> 00	10 - 20 - 20 - 20 - 20 - 20 - 20 - 20 - 2				hippuric
1.5 m	100	June .	- Xax.	11 E	#11 Y	Sugira	N11	1111	p-Amino-
XaX	N 4			3 12. 1 14.					
28			2 A 9 V	2		C 41			Acid.
また	<b>1949</b> - 47		2 844	A de	10-23 12		2	1.16 <sup>1</sup>	benzoic
3.6			ter.	84   2.00	5 4	2)		V" 7.	émino-
	E BX	BAX.	Max	ax.	kax.	Bax.	lex.	Slight	p-Acety1-
103					417	( () (	1.5 1 1.5 1 1.5 1		
	e	1.1		en Sing i	-		1. A.	Ċ.	acia atomia
	Max	•	Rax.	tax.	Fax.	ax.	Max.	Lax.	p-Amino
	i Ngt- com	1.1	fritin Se the	former Sinal				.4	
50	E	<b>.</b>	N) -	1.0	6.8	0.6	0.1	0.2	Sector and the sector
								Anno Anno Anno Anno	LOUDSLANCE.
medium.	test	ated to	grame st	in micrograms	quantity	adding qu	rowth on	0.	lysed
		1	94	1.5		*		11.4	Hydro

## SUMMARY.

Several chemical and microbiological methods have been described for the determination of p-sminobenzoic acid. A modification of McLeod's (1940) microbiological method has been employed in the experiments described in this thesis. The method of assay consists in comparing the amount of material which is required to neutralise the inhibitory action of sulphapyridine on Escherichia coli growing in a synthetic medium. with that of a standard solution of p-asinobenzoic acid under identical conditions. This micro-biological method was selected aince it is more sensitive (0.2 micrograms/cc.) than the chemical methods and the reagents are readily obtainable. The objection that sulphonamide-antagonism need not be due only to p-aminobenzoic acid, does not hold when the excretion of the latter after ingestion is measured since a control estimation is always carried out before the p-aminobenzoic acid is fed.

The methods of converting the inactive forms of p-aminobengoic acid in so far as sulphonamide-antagonism is concerned, to the active form are discussed, and the method used in these experiments is described. From a study of the behaviour of various derivatives of p-aminobengoic acid under the assay conditions used, the finding of other workers is confirmed that the inactive form excreted in the urine, and constituting by far the greater part, is p-acetylaminobengoic acid. The suggestion is, however, made that under physiological conditions all the p-aminobengoic acid is conjugated and excreted either as p-acetylaminobengoic acid or p-aminobengoyl glycurcnate.

# CHAPTER III. THE ABSORPTION AND EXCRETION

OF P-AMINOBENZOIC ACID.

Review of Previous Studies on Absorption and Excretion of p-aminobenzoic acid.

Very few studies have appeared in the literature regarding the absorption and excretion of p-aminobenzoic acid, although several workers have noted that this is very rapidly No completed when p-aminobenzoic acid is taken by mouth. information regarding the factors controlling absorption of p-aminobenzoic acid from the gastro-intestinal tract is available, nor indeed do we know from which part the absorption actually occurs. Straues, Lowell and Finland (1941) found that maximum blood levels are reached in 1-2 hours, and further that the excretion is rapid and is practically completed in 12 hours. Their experiments were carried out using relatively large quantities of p-aminobenzoic acid (1-4 grammes by mouth, and they determined the p-aminobenzoic acid content of the blood and urine by Bratton and Marshall's (1939, method for sulphonamides which, as has already been indicated, can be applied to p-aminobenzoic acid estimations. Conjugation of the p-aminobenzoic acid apparently begins early and progresses rapidly; 4 hours after doses of 1-2 grams the compound is no longer detected in the blood. After the single 4-gram doses, small quantities are still present in the blood after six hours. Urinary excretion is rapid and is largely completed in 12 hours. Following absorption, this compound apparently enters the blood cells but

is not equally distributed between cells and extracellular fluid. The concentration of p-aminobenzoic acid in blood plasma is about three times as great as its concentration in red cells. Snyder (1942, p.60), in a review on liver physiology, makes the statement that the bile salts greatly facilitate the absorption of p-aminobenzoic acid from the intestine. The source of the statement is not, however, acknowledged.

Lustig, Coldfarb and Gerstl (1944; studied the problem by using p-aminobenzoic acid in which the nitrogen had been replaced by the isotope 15, and found that no storage or utilisation of the labelled N15 of p-aminobenzoic acid was demonstrable. A male mouse weighing 16 g., depleted by placing it on a p-aminobenzoic acid-free diet for 8 - 12 weeks, received a single intraperitoneal injection of 5mg. of p-aminobenzoic acid containing the isotope N15. The mouse was eacrificed 24 hours after the injection and the W and N15 content of all organs was determined. The paminobenzoic acid. if retained and uniformly distributed in the body of the mouse, would have corresponded to a concentration of 0.010% excess atom N<sup>15</sup>. The diermination of heavy nitrogen, however, revealed that the excess N15 values of all organs, except the kidney, were below C. 007%. The kidney showed traces of excess atom N15(0.009%). To study the influence of larger quantities of p-aminobenzoic acid, a male mouse weighing 22 g. received three subcutaneous doces of 10 mg. within a 24-hour period. This amount - of labelled p-aminobenzoic acid, if equally distributed in the organism, would have resulted in an excess atom  $\frac{1}{2}$ 

Page 70. concentration equivalent to 0.045%. Nineteen hours after the last injection, however, only traces were found in the organs, but 227 micrograms N<sup>15</sup>, corresponding to 82% of the injected amount, were present in the excreta.

Several workers have reported that p-aminobenzoic acid is excreted in the urine partly in the free form and partly, as already discussed, conjugated as the acetyl derivative. Doisy and westerfeld (1943) believe that acetyl phosphate, formed through a chain of reactions from pyruvate through acetoin and discetyl, and not acetate, is the acetylating agent. Young (1939), in a review of the subject, stated that p-aminobenzoic acid is excreted unchanged by the dog, whereas it is converted to the acetylamino-derivative by man and the rabbit.

### ABSORPTION AND EXCRETION OF P-AMINOBENZOIC ACID IN MAN AFTER FREDING MINUTE DOSES.

The studies so far reported in the literature have concerned themselves with the absorption and excretion of p-aminobenzoic acid after relatively large doses have been fed. In view of the possible significance of p-aminobenzoic acid as a member of the vitamin B complex (which is more fully discussed in Chapter IV of this thesis), it was thought of interest to determine the excretion of this substance in man after minute doses are fed. From the reaction of the body to doses of p-aminobenzoic acid of the order likely to be involved if this substance was a vitamin, it was hoped to prove or disprove indirectly that p-aminobenzoic acid was a member of the vitamin B complex. This argument is developed later on p. 106, but here the disposal of small amounts of p-aminobenzoic acid, after being ingested by several were attempted at the outset, but the technique employed and described in the previous chapter was found to be neither sufficiently sensitive nor accurate, and since such estimations do not provide more information than can be obtained from the urine, they were not continued. Certain differences in these results to those already reported are easily apparent. Thus, Harrow, Magur and Sherwin (1933) reported that only about 25% of 1 or 2 gas. of p-aminobenzoic acid fed to rabbits could be isolated from the urine in the acetylated form. Strauss, Lowell and Finland (1941; found that about 33, of doese of 1-4gm. fed to man was excreted in the conjugated form. They were also unable to detect p-eminobenzoic acid in the urine 12 hours after ingestion. Kirch and Bergeim (1943), after noting that whereas early reports in the literature (Gibbs and Hare (1889); Hildebrand (1903)7 indicated that p-aminobenzoic acid passed through the animal organism unchanged. and that Ellinger and Sensel (1914) were the first to report the excretion of p-aminobenzoic acid partly conjugated as the acetyl derivative. the excretion continuing over a period of 1 - 4-days, interpret their experimental findings as indicating that some excretion of the acetyl derivative continues after 24 hours in human subjects, whereas no free p-aminobenzoic acid could be detected after 12 - 15 hours. Lewis (1942) found, using his microbiological procedure. that as much as 96% of the p-aminobenzoic acid in normal urine existed in an inactive form - probably the acetyl derivative.

Experiments 3, 4 and 5 indicate that when an amount of 100 mgme. of p-aminobenzoic acid is fed, approximately 70 - 75% of the p-aminobenzoic acid excreted is present as the acetyl derivative, whereas when amounts of 25 mgms. and less are fed, no p-aminobenzoic acid can be detected in the normal individual in the free form at all, apparently 100% of the p-aminobenzoic acid being acetylated. The evidence for acetylation being the method of "detox icating" p-aminobenzoic acid has already been discussed That the liver is the main site of the in Chapter III. acetylation is accepted by all workers on metabolic detoxia cation reactions. It can, therefore, be said that the liver of the normal human organism is certainly able to deal adequately with p-aminobenzoic acid up to the amount The effect of disease of the liver was inof 25 mgms. vestigated (Experiment 9,, from which it is apparent that when gross disease of the liver is obvious clinically, the individual is unable to detoxicate 25 mgms. of p-aminobenzoic soid and a slight amount of free p-aminobenzoic acid appears in the urine.

Experiments 3 - 6 also indicate that p-aminobenzoic acid is rapidly absorbed and excreted and that the excretion is apparently completed within 16 hours, within the limits of error of the experimental technique used.

The curious fact also emerges that even when a minute dose of 1 mg. is fed by mouth, p-aminobenzoic acid appears in the urine in the first 8-hour specimen collected after the dose is given, indicating that if the human

5056 73.

organism requires p-aminobenzoic acid, it is already saturated. This is shown in Experiment 6. However, the amount excreted is approximately proportional to the amount that could be recovered when the larger amounts were fed and way indicate that not more than approximately 50% of p-aminobenzoic acid fed is absorbed. The accuracy of the method used is not sufficiently great to investigate this point in greater detail. Some of the other investigators mentioned above claim to have recovered, by more refined techniques, all the p-aminobenzoic acid fed so that the poor recovery here may be due to experimental error. On the other hand, it is quite possible that when such minute quantities are fed the absorption may not be quantitative. Another explanation must also be considered - namely, that the tissues of the subjects tested were unsaturated with respect to p-aminobenzoic acid, so that a proportion of the p-aminobensoic acid absorbed is retained. This alternative is considered unlikely for the reasons (a) that the amount recovered is approximately the same even when larger doses were fed, (b) continued doses of 1 mg. of paminobenzoic acid at 8-hourly intervals do not increase the amount excreted and (c) Experiment 7 shows, as reported by other investigators /Lawis (1942), Mitchell. Isbell and Thompson (1943), Landy and Dicken (1942)7, that normal urine does contain minute amounts of p-aminobenzoic acid. To show such a quantity by the technique used, it was necessary to concentrate the urine 100-fold. Unfortunately. this procedure is too laborious to use as a routine.

It is, therefore, concluded that the human subjects

Pase 74.

tested here are saturated with respect to p-aminobenzoic acid, if indeed this substance is a vitamin. However this may be, experiment 6 also shows that continued 1 mg. quantities at 8-hourly intervals does not increase the amount excreted, from which it appears permissible to deduce that all the p-aminobenzoic acid is absorbed rapidly from the intestine - certainly within 8 hours.

The fact that practically no foodstuff (see Table in Chapter V) has more than minute amounts of p-aminobenzoic acid, and that normally only minute traces (approximately 0.1 - 0.2 micrograms; are excreted in the urine throws some doubt on whether p-aminobenzoic acid is a vitamin at all. Further, the reaction of the human organism to p-aminobenzoic acid, as shown in experiments 3 - 6, appears to me to be more compatible with p-aminobenzoic acid belonging to the group of "toxic" substances rather than to the group of vitaming. Since this view would be strengthened if it could be shown that the minute amounts of p-aminobenzoic acid excreted normally in the urine as the conjugated form were not derived from the dist taken, but were formed by the bacteria in the large intestine and absorbed - this being feasible since firstly, the quantity normally excreted is of the order of bacterial synthesis and, secondly, as already indicated (p.48) p-aminobenzoic acid can be synthesized by E. coli. for which it is an essential metabolite -- these points -were investigated. Experiment 8 shows that p-aminobenzoic acid can be absorbed from the large intestine, although the amount absorbed is much less than from the small intesting,

Pepe 75.

and appears to be continued over a longer period. It. must be noted. however, that experiment 8 actually demonstrates the absorption of p-aminobenzoic acid from the rectum and perhaps the pelvic colon, which parts of the large intestine have probably a much smaller absorbing power than have the acconding, transverse and descending If p-aminobenzoic acid was introduced into the colons. upper reaches of the large bowel, it would probably be found that a much larger percentage absorption of paminobenzoic acid would be obtained. The bacterial flora of the large intestine is, of course, very numer-Experiment 8 estabous throughout, the xbergex intesting. lishes. however, that p-aminobenzoic acid can be absorbed through the large intestine and, therefore, lends support to the hypothesis that the p-aminobenzoic scid excreted in the urine is actually formed by bacterial action in the large intestine and, when absorbed, is treated by the body as a "toxic" substance, acetylated by the liver and Experiment 10 (reported in Chapter V) proexcreted. vides experimental confirmation of this hypothesis. Experiment 3. Excretion of p-Aminobenzoic acid after

9.5.44. ingestion of 100 mgms, which was taken at 8 a.m. after emptying the bladder. All the urine passed for following 24 hours was collected at 4-hourly intervals until 12 midnight, and the final specimen at 8 a.m. the following morning. The volume of each specimen was noted and its p-aminobenzoic acid content estimated, from which the total quantity of p-aminobenzoic acid excreted was cal-

culated.

and the presence	Subject	Subject B.H.B.		Subject J	J.A.M.	
The period of the second secon	p-Amino excrete	p-Aminobenzoic acid excreted in milli-		p-Aminobe excreted	nobenzoic acid eted in milli- grams.	
- designed and	Tea	Acety- lated	Total.		Acetylated.	Total.
Before administer- ing of 100 mgms.	LIN	11K	NII	W11	LTM .	110
fter 4 hours	10.5	10.5	21	51 151	11.0	16.5
Fter & hours	12.3	19.5	31.8	11.0	16.5	27.5
fter 12 hours	1 a-2 2 30	1.27		12.8	25.3	38
After 16 hours	13.7	St.	46.7	12.8	26.9	39-7
fter 24 hours	13.7	35.8	49.5	12.8	29.2	42
					The second	

Anne-Jury, 1944.	
ceretion of p-aminobensoic	
ecid after ingestion of 25 mgms.	

Jeet.	p-Amino benzoic	80	1.0		n-Aminobenzoic		acid excret	-	ad in mgme.	· · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · ·		
	fore feed	fore feeding	4 hrs	•	ô hra.	C	after:- 12 hrs		16 hra	•	21, brs.	
	Free	Acety- lated.	Free	Acety- lated.	Free.	Acety-	Free	Acety-	l'Yee	Acety- lated.	Free	Acety- lated.
4.8	N11	N11	•		N11	z	•	**	811	12.18	111	12.18
	II M	<b>M11</b>	Noncold - L		LIN	4.6			111	· • • •	N11	9.4
61 13	111	TIM	. W1 1	6.3	N11	10.8	M11	11.4	NIL	11.5	N11	11.5
J.O.	N11	111	W11	9.4	111	9.5	M11	9.9	M11	9.9	1811 ···	9.9
.B.	MI	W11	M11	9.5	111	11.4	N11	11.5	LT.M	11.5	TTR	11.5
F	III III	111	<b>M11</b>	12.3	N11	12.8	N11	13.0	Wi1	13.0	111	13.0
B.R.	N11	111	N11	1011	N11	13.0	N11	13.3	F11	13.6	N11	13.6
	111	×11	第11	12.5	N11	¥.0	N11	14.3	TIM	14.4	1411	14.4

•

:4g# 77.

xperimen	6.10.44.
5	

Excretion of p-uninobenzoic acid after incestion of 10 mens.

i.t	-			and allowed the	with these							10-10-000
	excreti	benzoic acid	L bre	T on	p-Amin Abre	p-Aminobenzoio	anian - Antimentiat	acid excreted in signs.	in eign			
	(000)	(Control.		and the state of t		anananan sananan sanan sananan sananan						
	Pree	Acety- lated.	7786	Acety-	Free	Acety- lated.	Free	Acety- lated.	Free	Acety- lated.	Pree	Acety- lated.
54 57	HI	H M	1 	1	114	<b>F</b>	1	· • · · ·	N11	÷.9	711	4.9
51 .17	N11	M11	1	1 V ()	N11	5	1	<b>1</b>	M11	3.2	m11	3.2
	111	4	1		112		1	1	1111	al 	M11 3.4.	3.1

ţ

Page 78;

10.00 (3)	2	2		6.03		sec.	the second	Sert.	245	C.M	-5	e .		-	n	in the	5 11	t	11	<i>v</i> .,		£,
88.	Topped	38.7		1.141	14	4.5							-	FFOM	in myms.	Aminobenzoic					hours	
152-	136	188-	120	112	36	88	00-	32	20	5	f	324	16-	me		nzoi			Last	4 201	2	
-152	11-1	-136	- Bearing	-120		-96-	600	24-12	104	48-56	-18	EX	-24	5	0				e	c+	arter	
1 8	5. 18 1		11		200	4	H	1	1		轉	3	n a	nours	4.10	acid e	<u>,</u> " 4		1	dose	last	
4.5.8		1.15	terative otherwalky (s	100	She was	12	¢.,	а с	9	the m	2.4.2	15.	- constants and a	2.2	Ŧ	excreted	1 - 1	2	lat.	taken	do	
-		-	and a second	anialasta das	an and a second	-	-	hegeria	wines of			. Welconstan		10pi (10pi-10pi	anne de	ted	-	Bul	ann.	n at	*	
(jen			2		-	2 1 - 2	50 	5 Å.	2	- 12.			and a second	2.1	ha the	1	~	1000	12060	24th	8-hourly	
	9 4.	2 GA		78 2		g	<b>3</b>	11 1 11 1	1 - 1 1 0	*				110		1	Pre	Subjects:	5			100
	-			and a statest		was kande			)		-	A		Later Acression			a	B.	12	hour	intervale	
р. 3. 1. 1. 1.		Trace	10	~ ~	0	0	00	50	0	0	0	00		ta	112.	2.5	A	B.	100	in de	rval	at 8-hourly
3.5	-	~ @	.18	NU	-37	5	5		15	47	N'	20.0	-	HTT I	4	11	Acet.	~	YI FA	<u>e</u> , 1	a for	hour
5 23-*		Leas	and have printing a	12	1 42	14	±0: 3			44	.a. j	e f	State - strength	- 4 <sup>4</sup> -	£ 3						r 24	1 1
							-	4 3			3	* 1	<u> </u>	148		10	Les .			M J	hours	nte
(Maria		ajes	-			-	4		2.		a sig	47 82-14849 94.				trees	Free.	5	1-12	ç,	day.	intervals
inc	1			ş.,		5	1419		14		1.2.17	N.C.		-12	es 2	1		.W.		Č.,	prec	10
	4	N11	0.13		0.34	0.08	0.17	20.15	0.32	.53	29	10.23	4	4 L		4	Acet	1.7		\$ 101	ceding	4
XST	*	1.2. 1		R again over by	5		11	8			1			1 -	-1. In 10-1		**		1	\$1.57.		100
	2	. 18		2 2							8 C	* . 3		24	1 41 1 41		Fr	1	а 0.	- 12 -	first	(96)
1 day		1. 1. 1. 1. 1. 1. 1. 1. 1. 1. 1. 1. 1. 1		1- A			1.9	F3 (		8	12	14	0.5	-25	5.		Free.	8	12	1. 1. 1.	dose	1 1
	- C	nan ara			Ċ			nor an	-	1 2	TM2	1.3	5		2. 2			R.	1.52	ġ.	end	i hog
4 5	3	MII	0.2	0.0	2.2	0.9	0.2	1.0	0.05	0.22	0.5	0.18		I TIN	3	210	Acet	1.4	G	Ó.	for	-
are an	10 E	1.0	0	or		101					4.0	35		1. N	1	ñ.			54	1.4	40	
1. m. 1-	Gus .	New .	- 50	Ver a																		

Fage 79.

#### 3.11.44.

# Experiment 7. The p-Aminobenzoic acid content of normal urine.

24-hour specimen of urine (B.B.) volume 1130 c.c. concentrated down on a steam-bath to the consistency of a thick syrup with separated-out solid matter. The residue was made acid to a pH of 3 and the p-aminobenzoic acid extracted with an approximately equal volume of ether (about 125 c.c.) 5 times. The ether extract is evaporated to dryness and the p-aminobenzoic acid in the residue taken up in 10 c.c. of  $\frac{1}{2}$ . NaHCO3 and filtered. The pH was then adjusted to 7 and the volume of the filtrate made up to 11.3 c.c., thus concentrating the urine 100 times. The content of p-aminobenzoic acid was then determined as in the previous experiments.

<u>Pree p-aminobenzoic acid</u> was not detectable in 1 c.c. of the extract, whereas the smallest volume of extract in which conjugated p-aminobenzoic acid was found was 0.1 c.c.

Bince C.2 micrograms of p-aminobenzoic acid was required to allow growth of E. coli under the conditions of this experiment, it follows that there was less than 0.2 micrograms free p-aminobenzoic acid present in 1 c.c. of extract or in 100 c.c. of urine, i.e. <u>less than 0.002</u> <u>micrograms free p-aminobenzoic acid per c.c. of urine,</u> and that there was 0.2 micrograms of p-acetylaminobenzoic acid present in 0.1 c.c. of extract = 10c.c. of <u>urine, i.e. 0.02 micrograms of p-acetylaminobenzoic acid</u> per c.c. of urine. 17.7.45.

Experiment 8. Absorption of p-sminobenzoic acid from the large intestine.

25 mg. of p-aminobenzoic acid was dissolved in 100 c.c. of saline and injected intra-rectally with a syringe and enema tube and retained for 8 hours. Urine specimens collected before, and at 8-hourly intervals after, the administration of p-aminobenzoic acid and the paminobenzoic acid excretion estimated as already detailed.

1.5	Subje	ect B.B.	Subje	et B.R.
	Free	Aceby.	Pree.	Acet.
Mgma.p-aminobenzoic acid excreted in urine before p-aminobenzoic acid ad- ministered.	N11	NII	N11	Nil
gms.p-aminobenzoic acid excreted in urine after:-	2.3		1 4	
8 hours		0.85	м	2.30
16 "		1.33	77	2.98
24 "	- 97	1.41	43	3.06
			1	1

Pase 82.

ě	Į.		er mente sui la cauje	an nga nating says na		
liver. Jaundice. ? Infective HEpatitis.	? Generalised Miliary T.B. + T.B.of liver. ? Carcinoma of	Carcinoma of liver (proved by Biopey).		in di Dilon d Ciarac Ciarac Togian,	- Diagnosis.	
na of <b>X</b> eis Joies, r	11.000 (1990) 10.000 (1990)	re <b>H</b> ng. 900	Pree.	acid in before j benzoic	Quantity	
ancen <b>B</b> o is, ancted wax	s. or <b>l</b> e	- <b>4</b> -0 	Acet.	in urine . e p-amino- ic acid Centrol	tity of nobenzoic	disease after
	the an <b>N</b> h	an <b>P</b>	Pree.	th hours	p-a	er oral
Consta <b>t</b> e bas 1 benz <b>2</b> , el	<b>5.80</b>	oply <sup>0</sup> or	Acet.	6 1/ <b>8</b> (2010)	p-aminobenzoic acid	ingestion
		udeto Ung <b>B</b> e	Pree.	the bids hours	zoic a	in or
	0 20	9. ¥	Acet.	eras <b>e</b> . Economic	old exc	25 mgms.
i selliğiter Altaşatır		No construction of the second	ree.	12 hours.	reted	P
eases <b>L</b> act	12.70	10.10 F	/cet.	A NORTH	in mer	aminobenzoic
Lanie re	ats <b>9</b>	5	Free.	16 hours	ngms. af	dorn <mark>e</mark> nzoic
druer <b>A</b> for	12.80	10.67	Acet.	2 - 16 <u>19</u> 1.1	after:	acid.
	0.07	t 04.0	Pree. A	24 hour	ites sted	es. 1100
ate t <b>i</b> have	12.85		Acet	THE REAL	1.	1

#### SUMMARY.

The studies previously reported in the literature have concerned themselves with the absorption and excretion of p-aminobenzoic acid after relatively large doses have been fed. In view of the possible significance of p-aminobenzoic acid as a member of the vitamin B complex, the absorption and excretion of this substance in man after feeding minute doses When 100 mg. was fed, approximately 25-30% were studied. of the amount excreted was present in the "free" form, whereas when 25 mg. or less were fed, all the p-aminobenzoic acid excreted was acetylated, indicating that the liver of the normal human organism is able to"detoxicate" or "conjugate" p-aminobenzoic acid up to an amount of 25 mg. The experiments also indicate that p-aminobenzoic acid is rapidly absorbed -within 8 hours, although only to the extent of about 50%, and that the excretion is completed within 16 hours or less.

A curious fact emerging from these experiments is that even when such a minute dose as 1 mg. was fed by mouth, p-aminobenzoic acid appeared in the urine in the first 8-hour specimen collected. This could be interpreted as indicating that the subjects tested must have already been saturated with p-aminobenzoic acid if indeed it is a vitamin at all. It is. however, claimed that these results indicate rather that the human organism treats p-aminobenzoic acid as it does other toxic aniline derivatives, and not as if it is a vitamin. This view is strengthened by the finding that p-aminobenzoic acid can be absorbed from the large intestine, which indicates that the minute quantity of p-aminobenzoic acid excreted normally in the urine could be formed by bacterial synthesis in the large intestine from which, when it happens to be absorbed, it is

immediately "detoxicated" by the liver and excreted. This hypothesis is further developed in chapter V.

•

#### CHAPTER IV.

## IS P-AMINOBENGGIC ACID A VITAMINT DEFINITION OF THE TERM "VITAMIN".

Before we can profitably discuss the claims of p-aminobenzoic acid to be a vitamin and, in fact, one of the components of the vitamin E complex. it is essential to define what we mean by the term 'vitamin'. Immediately we come upon considerable difficulties. In the early days of vitamin research, the implications of the term "vitamin" were fairly clear and the division of foodstuffs into (a, the energy-producing, tissue-building materials, and (b, the accessory food factors which were indispensable to growth, maintenance and reproduction of the human and animal world, was Renerally acceptable. The latter group of substances was further defined as being compounds which were effectivein minute amounts, provided no energy to the body, acted as organic catalysts, and the most important point of all, could not be synthesized in the animal body. but had to be provided in the food.

Hopkins called the nutritional elements, which are required by the animal organism in addition to proteins, fats, carbohydrates, minerals and water, the "accessory food factors". Funk in 1911 proposed the generic term "vitamine" for these substances because they were essential to life and because he believed the anti-beriberi

Page 84.

factor to be an amine. Pinally in 1920, when it was shown that these substances were not amines, Drusmond proposed that the terminal "e" of "vitamine" be dropped and that this group of substances be referred to by the generic term "vitamin". This suggestion was generally adopted by workers in this field and is still accepted and in current use, although considerable discussion has now arisen as to whether this generic term should be retained or changed to a term which would not indicate any relationship to the chemical or physiological properties of these compounds, since it is becoming more and more difficult to separate the vitamins into a distinct, well-defined group which does not overlap with other groups.

Recent intensive research in this field has revealed the existence of compounds which have been arbitrarily added to the list of known vitamins, but which do not fulfil in some respect or other what is generally accepted as characteristic of this class of substances. As an example may be quoted such substances as choline and related compounds which supply the essential transferable methyl group, behave very similarly and have similar functions to the vitamins, but which can be synthesized in the animal body. It has also now been demonstrated that known and accepted vitamins can be synthesized in the animal body. Thus, parts of the vitamin B complex and vitamin K can be synthesized by intestinal bacteris, and even vitamin C can be synthesized by rate, which do not develop

Page 85.

scurey on an ascorbic acid-deficient diet. If then choline is excluded from the group of vitamins, why should some members of the vitamin B complex, vitamin K and vita-Other compounds have also been arbitmin C be retained? rarily excluded from the group of vitemins although they conform to the general definition given above. Such compounds are the essential amino acids and essential unsaturated fatty acids, which are constituents of enzyme systems involved in the metabolism of energy-bearing foods. These have apparently been excluded since our earlier knowledge of these substances showed them to be energyproducing and structure-building substances, in which respects they obviously differed from vitamins, xxxxxxxxxxxx N DERENDEN AL TREAM TREADER OF DESCRIPTION AND A DESCRIPTION OF THE ADDRESS AND AD Rosenberg (1942, pp.5-6) proposed a new name for such substances -"vitagens" which he defined as a broad group to include compounds which have a similarity to vitaming, but which differ in one or more important functional aspects from The term "vitagen" emphasises that the compounds them. of this class are concerned with the production and maintenance of life. Resenberg recommends that this terminology be adopted until the time when more precise information is available concerning the physiological action of these compounds and the vitamins. It appears to me that, beyond acknowledging the fact that the group of "vitamins" is not capable of accurate definition, this term has no In fact, it appears more suitable to transfer real value. most of the accepted "vitamins" from their own group and the weather to the same setting at the

place them in the group of "vitagens".

Let us now examine some of the suggested recent definitions of the term "vitamin". It should be noted in passing that most textbooks and treatises dealing with vitamins, content themselves with a brief historical introduction and discreetly evade any attempt at a defini-I would humbly auggest that no conference of extion. perts and workers in this field of nutrition could reach unanimity on this question at all, and it is probable that the use of the term "vitamin" will sooner or later have to be abandoned and the various members systematised according to their chemical structures and their physiological effects. Some of them, for example, belong more properly among intracellular enzyme systems and, when these are classified and grouped among such compounds, the blurred distinctions between vitamins, essential amino-acids, fatty acids and choline would be removed.

Stepp, Euhnam and Echroeder (1938), in their intoduction, refer to vitamins as components in very small quantities of the plant body sharing in the regulation of the processes of the plant. They can, therefore, also be considered as hormones of the plant world. After they have been taken up by the animal body in the food, they carry out important tasks, partly in regard to vital phenomena in the cell itself, and partly in regulating remote processes. From the standpoint of quantity, they can hardly be considered as energy producers. In general, since the animal is not able to synthesize them, it is

Tint - 128.2.

Page 87.

obliged to ingest the vitamins in its diet - directly in vegetable food and indirectly in animal nutriments - either already synthesized or as provitamins (from which the specific substance or vitamin is produced, by radiant energy or by catalytic co-operation of other diet factors). The vitamins must be grouped among the primitive substances of all organic life, since they are found in the lowest forms of life (bacteria, algae and fungi). They play a decisive role in the animal world, even among the organisms possessing neither hormonal glands nor hormones. In higher animals, where internal secretion first appears as a physiological arrangement, there are at once close reciprocations established with the vitamins.

Rosenberg (1942, pp. 3-7) defines vitamina as organic compounds which are required for the normal growth and maintenance of life of animals, including man, which as a rule are unable to synthesize these compounds by anabolic processes that are independent of environment other than air, and which compounds are effective in small amounts, do not furnish energy and are not utilised as building units for the structure of the organism, but are essential for the transformation of energy and for the regulation of the metabolism of structural units. Rosenberg classifies as hormones those compounds which are produced anabolically, but which otherwise conform to his defini-He claims that the above definition tion of vitamins. clearly differentiates this group of nutrients from all other food constituents. He dismisses the fact that

the apparent independence of cattle for certain members of the vitamin B complex and for vitamin K (which is due to bacterial synthesis of these vitamins in the rumen. requires that these members of the vitamin B complex and vitamin K should be excluded from the group of vitamins by definition, arguing that bacterial synthesis in the gut is not an anabolic process. The fact that one of the vitamins D can be produced in the skin by an anabolic process is also glossed over since this anabolic process is not independent of the environment but requires energy from the outside - namely ultraviolet light. Further, as long as at least one animal species is known to be unable to synthesize a particular compound, that compound, according to hosenberg, should be considered a vitamin provided it conforms with the definition for vitamins in other particulars. Resenberg, however, admits that the definition of vitamine, as given above, can and has been disputed. The most severe criticism according to him has arisen from the fact that the ingested essential nutrients exert no vitamin activity as such, but are active only after chemical transformation into other compounds. According to these views, the ingested compounds should be called "provitamine" unless it is established that they do not undergo transformation in the body. On this basis, compounds like nicotinamide and riboflavin which are constituents of a number of different enzymes would -require that a multitude of different vitamins has to be Since Rosenberg holds that the term recognised.

"vitamine" is required for the science of nutrition which needs some name for this group, afxxxxxxxx he proposes the term <u>Tvitazyme</u>" for enzymes which contain vitamine. As has already been mentioned, another term "<u>vitagena</u>" also becomes necessary, according to Rosenberg, to descrite compounds which act as suppliers of energy or as structural building units, but fulfil all the other qualifications of the vitamine. It seems to use that it would be more logical to dispense with the term "vitamins" altogether in scientific works describing or evaluating the significance of new compounds in nutrition and metabolism, since the rapid increase of knowledge in this field has led to insuperable difficulties in deciding what criteria

To sub-divide the constituents of a diet by their chemical structure, discussing for each, thereafter, whether it provides energy, whether it is required for development and growth of body cells and tissues, whether it is incorporated into enzyme systems and so forth, would be more logical.

a compound must satisfy to qualify as a vitamin.

One cannot help feeling, when studying Rosenberg's elaborate definition, that he has first decided which substances should be included in the definition, these being the substances already called vitamins, and then has been at great pains to mould his definition so that it would include all of them, even though this has meant introducing such fine hair-splitting distinctions as to

Page 90.

make one wonder why all this should be necessary at all. Eaving sade his definition, Eosenberg finds that he must exclude certain compounds which other? Would be included on the general grounds of what one understands by a vitamin, and hastens to introduce new terms, vitagens and vitazymes. Further snags also come easily to mind. Some of these are discussed below, namely what distinctions, if any, must we draw between vitagens and the "essential metabolitee" and growth factors" of bacteria, other than the fact that vitagins refer to animals and the latter two to lower forms of life, in fact to vegetable life?

Although the term "vitamin" has become incapable of exact definition and, moreover, has lost most of its significance with the development of our knowledge of cellular physiology, it still has considerable value in popular discussion. The term "vitamin" should therefore be retained in such descriptions since it still serves some purpose, and since the impossibility of exact definition is not here of great importance.

Other illustrations of the difficulties into which bur retention of the term "vitamin" has led us can be found in remarks made by various writers and reviewers on the significance of this term. György (1942, defined vitamine as food constituents of organic origin, minute quantities of which have specific biological effects and lack of which in the food produces pathological disturbances, occasionally only under special conditions. He

Page 91.

remarked then that in the light of recent research. two objections can easily be raised to this definition: (a) Should choline. because it is used not in "minute quantities" but in relatively high doess, be excluded from the group of water-soluble vitamins and should it. in consequence. be called only a "dietary essential"? If the answer is in the affirmative, why should ascorbic acid, pantothenic acid and nicotinic acid, all of which are also administered in rather large doses, be called vitaming, and what is the objective reason for the erection of such an artificial barrier? And if choline should be considered a vitamin - a view with which György agrees although choline can be anabolised in the animal body - why, then, should methionine, which supplies methyl-groups to choline and which, therefore, has cholinelike properties, be excluded from the group of vitamins? In further consequence there would then be raised the problem of classifying essential amino-acids as close relatives of vitamins. (b) In the light of recent studies, it is unnecessary to make the classification of a vitamin depend on its character as a food constituent. Some vitamins, such as various members of the vitamin B complex, can be synthesized in the ruman of certain animals Moreover. It appears very probable that by bacteria. biotin, at least in mammale, is supplied mainly by the activity of the intestinal bacteria. The same process might apply to "folic acid". The presence of these factors in the ingested food would not necessarily then

be a prerequisite for adequate nutrition.

Williams (1963) believed that it was not possible to delimit the meaning of the term "vitamin" without taking into consideration the historical fact that at one time the nutritional requirements of animals were thought to be satisfied by minerals, carbohydrates, lipides and proteins alone. At the same time certain "building stones" entering into the make-up of fats and proteins (e.g. fatty acids and amino acida) were known to be utilised by the animal body in the synthesis of these major tissue constituents. Vitamins, hisbrically, were something new and different. There has been a resistance to the classification of nutritionally important fatty acids (linoleic, linolenic acids as vitamins (vitamin F) because they are too closely related to fate which had long been recognized as important food constituents. For the same reason, there is resistance to including new amino-acids or choline in the vitamin group. Their relationship to food constituents recognised long ago is too close. On the other hand, there has never been any resistance towards the inclusion of nicotinic acid among the vitamins. while it has been known as a compound, and even as an occasional constituent of tissues for several decades, it constitutes something new, historically, on the nutritional scene. Inositol and p-aminobenzoic acid, according to Williams, belong with nicotinic acid among the vitamins because they too, are

Page 93.

not directly related to the classical groups of foodstuffs. <u>RELATIONSHIP OF "ESSENTIAL METABOLITES" AND "GROWTH FACTORS"</u> TO "VITAMINS".

It is necessary to examine the relationship of the terms "escential metabolite" and "growth factor" to that of "vitamin", since p-aminobenzoic acid first came into prominence as an "essential metabolite". Fildes (1940) introduced the terms "essential metabolite" and "growth factors" and his views on the method of growth and multiplication of bacteria have already been described. (p.1). He considered that what applied to bacteria, applied also to all cells. Briefly, Fildes defined an "essential metabolite" as a substance or chemical group which took an essential part in a chain of syntheses necessary for bacterial growth. A "growth factor" is an essential metabolite which the cell cannot synthesize and which must, therefore, be supplied in the nutrients. The literature identifying p-aminobenzoic acid as an "essential metabolite" and in some organisms as a "growth terms "growth factor" which is applied to bacterial nutrition and "vitamin" which is applied to animal nutrition appear, therefore, to be analogous. On Rosenberg's definition, the terms "essential metabolite" and "vitagen" are also analogous, so that it may be possible in the animal world as in bacteria that the same substance may in some cases be a vitamin, and in others a vitagen.

THE THE LOW OF MENTS AND A TO THE REAL PROPERTY.

#### EVIDENCE FOR THE VITAMIN CHARACTER OF P-AMINOBENZOIC ACID.

Ansbacher (1941) was the first to claim that p-aminobenzoic acid was a vitamin and a member of the vitamin B (Ansbacher 1944) complex, which he defined/as (a) a natural constituent of yeast, liver and/or cereals; (b) water-soluble; (C) a growth-promoting substance for bacteria, yeasts, fungi, and/or moulds; (d) a co-enzyme or activator of enzymatic processes; (e) physiologically effective in minute amounts; (f) a substance which causes a deficiency disease when lacking in the diet. He reported experiments showing that p-aminobenzoic acid was a chromotrichia factor for the rat and a growth-promoting factor for the chick. He fed black and piebald rats on a basal diet consisting of cerelose, casein, salts, agar, soybean oil, crisco and cod liver oil, to which was added thiamine hydrochloride. riboflavin and pyridoxine hydrochloride, calcium pantothenate, nicotinic acid, inositol and choline chloride. On this diet, the fur of the animals showed definite graying, and when this had become apparent, 70% of the animals received a second daily supplement containing paminobenzoic acid. A bluish discobration of the skin, a typical first sign of growth of normally pigmented hair, was seen in from two to three weeks and black hair appeared within a month. The control animals continued to show typical achromotrichia. Chicke reared on a heated vitamin-K deficient diet, previously described by Ansbacher. were found to show only a small gain in weight and to die within about a month, even when ample amounts of calcium pantothenate and of the vitamin K-active 2-methyl-1,

4-naphthoquinone were fed, but when p-aminobenzoic acid was added to the ration, better growth resulted and the survival times were longer.

In the following sections, Ansbacher's claim is reviewed, and it is concluded on the basis of available evidence that paminobenzoic acid's place among the vitamins appears to rest on very insecure foundations.

#### p-Aminobenzoic Acid and Achremotrichia.

The relation of the vitamin B complex to graying of the hair in experimental animals goes back several years. Among the earliest reports in this field was one by Morgan, Cook and Davidson (1938), indicating that experimental achromotrichia was due to a deficiency in a factor or group of factors belonging to the vitamin E complex. Although several factors have since been incriminated, it is intended here to review only those reports on the relationship of p-aminobenzoic acid to achromotrichia. Following Ansbacher's announcement (19417. Eartin and Ansbacher (1941, studied the effect of p-aminobenzoic acid on the graying of the fur of mice produced by hydroquinone. Most of the animals showed achromotrichia within 4-20 weeks which could be cured either by feeding a rice polish concentrate as a daily supplement or p-aminobenzoic acid (0.75 mg. daily). After about a week of the p-aminobenzoic acid treatment, some of the animals showed definite signs of blackening of the fur, and at the end of two weeks all the mice were cured. In fact, their fur appeared to be more deeply pigmented than that of the control animals on the stock diet without the addition of hydroquinone. The authors concluded that the

achromotrichia produced by hydroquinone poisoning was due to a vitamin deficiency and that p-aminobenzoic acid was the chromotrichia factor. In the same year Martin. #isansky and Ansbacher (1941; reported a study on the influence of p-aminobenzoic acid and other substances on reactions yidding melanin, namely in tyrosine-tyrosinase, dopa-tyrosinase and catechol-tyrosinase systems, using potato tyrosinase as catalyst. The data were interpreted as showing conclusively that under identical experimental conditions. calcium pantothenate has no influence and that p-aminobenzoic acid and, interestingly enough, sulphanilamide were effective in modifying melanin formation. Thus when p-aminobenzoic acid was added, the intermediate red stage seen with tyrosine-tyrosinase systems did not develop and the black melanin precipitate was not formed, but instead a brownish reaction mixture was produced. In view of this, the authors considered that p-aminobenzoic acid modified in the animal organism the type of melanin produced from the oxidation of dioxyphenylalanine (or dopa) by dopa oxidase, an enzyme which is present in the skin, but the nature of which has not been clearly defined. Using the warburg apparatus, wisansky, wartin and Ansbacher(1941) also determined the effect of p-aminobenzoic scid on the kinetics of tyrosinese action, and found that it retarded the aerobic exidation of tyrosine and dopa. How these findings can be correlated with the chromotrichia effect of p-aminobenzoic acid, however, was not discussed.

It appears to me that these experiments contradict the

Page 95.

rage 97.

finding that p-aminobenzoic acid is a chromotrichia factor, since they seem to indicate an interference and not an assistance with melanin synthesis. Since aniline has the same effect, this action of p-aminobenzoic acid is probably a toxic one. The similar effect of sulphanilamide is, however, of interest as providing an example of an enzyme system which both p-aminobenzoic acid and sulphanilamide appear to attack at the same point although in this case their actions are not antagonistic.

The above conclusions are still further confused by a report of Emerson (1941). In the appearance of Anabacher's paper, a considerable number of characteristically grayed rats were available to Imerson for experimentation. They had been raised on a somewhat different ration from that employed by Anabacher, for they received a vitamin B Veficient diet supplemented only with thismine hydrochloride, riboflavin and pyridoxin hydrochloride, instead of thiamine hydrochloride, riboflavin, pyridoxin hydrochloride, calcium pantothenate, nicotinic acid, inositol and choline chloride. After 25 to 30 days, a marked darkening of the fur was noted in the group supplemented with calcium pantothenate alone and with calcium pantothenate plus p-aminobenzoic acić. The animals receiving p-aminobenzoic acid alone were not altered in appearance and were indistinguishable from the controls. There was, however, an evident stimulus to growth as well as cure of the graying in the animals supplemented with the calcium pantothenate along or the pantothenate and p-aminobenzoic acid. The

.

p-sminobenzoic acid alone, which had no influence on the graying, also evoked no growth response. In spite of these negative curative effects, Smerson further investigated the possibility that graying could be produced with the exact insbacher diet regardless of the fact that it was supplemented with 500 micrograms of calcium pantothenate daily and that such graying could be prevented or cured with p-aminobenzoic acid, but after more than two months on insbacher's diet, no evidence of graying had appeared in any of these control animals. Hence p-amino benzoic acid, which it was planned to give when graying developed, was not even necessary.

Page 98.

Unna, Richards and ampson (1941) found that young black rate maintained on a highly purified diet free from vitamin B complex, but supplemented with thismine. riboflaving, nicotinic acid, pyridoxine and choling regu larly developed conspicuous graying of the fur within 3 to 7 weeks. A daily supplement of 100 micrograms of calcium pantothenate, representing approximately the optimum daily amount for growth, prevented the occurrence of gray hair and restored within 4 - 6 weeks the black pigmentation of the fur in rats which had been rendered gray on the deficient diet. Frequently some scattered gray hairs persisted in spite of an apple supplement of pantothenic These results agreed with findings of other invesacid. timators, but it must be mentioned that not all workers agree on the relationship of pantothenic acid to achromotrichia although it appears to be one of the required

factors. Other B-complex factors such as biotin and possibly choline, other dietary deficiencies, notably iron, copper and manganese, and perhaps hormonal factors, in particular the sex hormones, have been suggested as playing some part in the development of rat achromotrichia. A disturbed relationship between the B-vitamins and the sex hormones, for example, has even been suggested as a cause of faulty pigmentation, but the relevant literature cannot be reviewed here.

Unna. Sichards and Sampson (1941) also administered p-aminobenzoic acid in relatively large doses of 3 mg. daily to rate either from the beginning of their dictary regimen or after they had been rendered grey. 3 mg. of p-aminobenzoic acid to a rat must be considered a very large dose, beyond the maximum physiological utilisation since, as has already been pointed out (Experiment 6), 1 ma. doses to man result in its rapid excretion in the It is, therefore, reasonable to assume that urine. such a dose would be adequate to produce pigmentationif, indeed, p-aminobenzoic acid had such a physiological property, but Unna and his co-workers report that no such effect was observed in either group of experimental animale. Laily administration of 3 mg. of p-aminobenzoic acid over periods extending to 6 weeks were also unsuccessful in influencing the scattered gray hairs which frequently persist following the addition of pantothenic acid as described above. These authors also failed to obtain graving of the fur in rate receiving adequate emounts of pantothenic acid and hence were unable to confirm Ansbacher's (1941) work. Henderson, McIntyre, Waisman and Elvehjem (1942) were also unable to confirm Insbacher's report, finding that p-aminobenzoic acid was not effective in relieving the graying of hair noted in rats fed low levels, 0-40 micrograms, of pantothenic acid. On higher levels of pantothenic acid, graying did not develop.

Martin (1942a), attempting to bring these various conflicting observations into harmony, repeated the work of the above investigators and developed an interesting thesis. He confirmed the results of Unna et al. and of Emerson that the six basic factors, thismine, riboflavine, nicotinic acid, pyridoxine, choline and calcium pantothenate, were adequate for seemingly normal nutrition. They were, however, not adequate if either p-aminobenzoic acid or inositol was added to the diet.

Anabacher (1941) and Eartin and Ensbacher (1941) had inositol in their basic supplements and thus noted p-aminobenzoic acid deficiency. Neither Unna et al nor Emerson included inositol in their basic dict. Eartin therefore suggested that the possible explanation lay in a stimulation and/or inhibition of bacterial growth in the intestinsl tract and hence the bacterial growth in the intestinsl tract and hence the bacterial synthesis of vitamin factors, known or unknown in nature. Both inositol and paminobenzoic acid have been demonstrated to be growth factors for certain bacteria. Purther, the synthesis of certain factors, particularly biotin and inositol, by orgenisms present in the intestinal tract has been reported. That stimulation of the growth of micro-organisms by one

member of the vitamin B complex causes those micro-organisms to synthesize an increased quantity of another member of the B complex is certain. Martin's thesis then is that inositol stimulates the growth of organisms which utilise and destroy some member of the vitamin B complex. known or unknown, and precipitates a deficiency of that factor. p-Aminobenzoic acid either through stimulation or inhibition of becterial growth (which it is cepable of doing in large amounts, precipitates an inositol defici-Inositol may stimulate the growth of organisms ency. which destroy pantothenic acid, whereas the addition of p-aminobenzoic acid may inhibit the growth of these orgenisme. Martin reports that Proteus vulgaris is absent from the gestro-intestinal tracts of rate fed excessive amounts of p-aminobenzoic acid daily, and that there is a tendency for the lactic-acid-forming organisms to over-The seeming inhibition of Froteus organisms may, row. therefore, be actually due to overgrowth on the part of the acid-forming organisms. In a further communication, Martin (1942b) suggested that the problem of nutritional achromotrichia assumed a less controversial aspect with the knowledge of the role of folic scid, the powerful growth-stimulating effect of which on rate, first shown by Nielsen and Ivehjem (1942), Martin confirmed. In addition, he showed that "folic acid" is also a chromotrichial factor for rats. Physicians have often noted that graying of the hair occurred following a protracted illness associated with gastro-intestinal disease, and

Page 102.

Martin deduced from this observation, evidence of the importance of the bacterial flora of the intestine in achromotrichia. As it is impossible to produce a "folic acid" deficiency in the rat without the use of sulphonamides to reduce the intestinal synthesis of this factor. Martin suggests that this type of achromotrichia would only be produced without sulphonamides if vitamin balance were altered in a manner to affect the composition of the intestinal flora, thus altering the synthesis of "folic acid", and explains in this paper the discordant results reported on the role of p-aminobenzoic acid in achromotrichis by concluding that p-sminobenzoic acid plays a role in nutritional achromotrichia only in so far as it alters the intestinal flora and by so doing alters the intestinal synthesis of "folic acid". Eriggs, Lucky, Mills, Elvehjem and Hart (1943, later showed experimentally in chicks that p-sminobenzoic acid can stimulate "folic scid production by, and growth of, the wicro-organisms found in the intestine of chicks.

There is some disagreement as to the value of pantothenic acid in the treatment of human gray hair, but the majority of workers appear to favour the view that its value as a human anti-gray hair factor is not adequately proved. A similar conclusion appears to be justified as far as p-aminobenzoic acid is concerned. Sieve (1941) was the first to announce that p-aminobenzoic acid caused a marked darkening of the hair of man. Fifty patients varying in age from 21 - 55 years, with definite achromo-

Page 103. trichia were picked at random. In 30 cases p-aminobenzoic acid was the sole therapy, and in 20 cases, endocrine products in conjunction with the acid were administered. After about two months of treatment, a marked darkening of the hair was noted in all cases. The recently grown shafts appeared to be normally pigmented. Sieve considered that a dose of 100 mg. of p-aminobenzoic acid twice daily was ample to give results. In a second report. Sieve (1942) described the results of treatment of 800 patients of both sexes, varying from 16 - 74 years of age with p-aminobenzoic acid. - He noted that after 3 to 8 weeks of treatment the gray hair was characterised by a yellowish cast which gave a dirty appearance to the hair, and in those cases in which this yellow hue was noted, a dark dusty gray colour was observed which gave the hair generally a darker sheen. After this there was a gradual increase in the darkening, which varied considerably in time, apparently depending upon the general physiological condition of the patient. Sieve

drew attention to the fact that the clinical picture of achromotrichia is often complicated by a concurrent endocrine disturbance, but found that in such cases too p-aminobenzoic acid had a beneficial effect. Normal pigmentation of parts, such as the nipples and mucous membranes of the mouth, vagina and anus were observed during treatment with p-aminobenzoic acid for achromotrichia. Particularly in young girls just beyond puberty, there was noted a definite darkening of the

Fage 104.

aerolae mammae, labia and vaginal mucous membranes. p-Aminobenzoic acid was also tried in cases of alopecia areata and vitiligo. In these cases a definite return of colour occurred in depigmented areas of the skin and white hair growing in areas of pigmentation took on a dirty yellow colour. The doses of p-aminobenzoic acid given were 100 mg. three times deily for 5 to 20 weeks.

Similar effects were noted by Banay (1942). Some 20 instates of a penal institution received p-aminobenzoic acid in the form of a 100 mg. tablet three times daily for periods varying from 6 to 8 months as the sole therapy and without any change in the daily routine and dietary regimen. A progressive gradual darkening of the hair occurred, starting at the back of the head from the vertex down to the occipital region, and returning in geometric designs or islands instead of following a general distribution.

Eller and Diaz (1943) administered p-aminobenzoic acid to 83 persons of different ages and sexes in various stages of achromotrichia. The patients were given lotmg. tablets 3 or 4 times daily over 3 to 5 months with no unteward effects. There were only a small number (4, who showed definite changes in the colour of their hair, and in no patient in the entire group of 88 patients was there a complete change from white or gray to the normal, original colour of the patient's hair. Since the increase in pigmentation of the hair occurred in so few cases in the treated group, the authors are not certain that the p-aminobenzoic acid was the causative factor, in the darkening of the hair, and are of the opinion that the use of p-aminobenzoic acid for achromotrichia needs further investigation and corroboration before being expounded to the public as a "cure" for gray hair.

A possible explanation of the discrepancies in the results of previous investigators is given by Brandalcone. Main and Steele (1943 in a critical evaluation of the criteria employed for deciding whether pigmentation of the hair was produced by either calcium pantothenate or p-aminobenzoic acid. These workers administered vitawin preparations for eight months to a group of elderly men and women with white or graving hair who were confined to hospital with chronic diseases such as rheumatoid erthritis. general arteriosclerosis and parkinsonism. of the group of 19 patients, 7 received 100 mg. of calcium pantothenate, 200 mg. ofpeminobenzoic acid and 50 g. of brewer's yeast daily; 5 received the yeast and p-aminobenzoic acid, and 7 the yeast and calcium pantothenate. Three methods for juding change in hair colour were used: (1) photographs were taken before, during and at the end of medication, (2) samples of hair were clipped from a given area at the time the pictures were made and (3) all patients were seen by the same two observers at least twice a month and notes taken of any change observed. Photographs were found to be useless; slight changes in distance or lighting made considerable difference in the apparent colour of the hair. The subjective opinions were claimed to be more accurate than photographs and less

Page 106.

discouraging than hair samples. Several changes were noted in the hair of the treated subjects. The most common was the appearance of a yellow or greenish cast to the gray hair. Growth of scattered wiry black hair also became apparent. In several patients there was thought to be greater lustre without change in colour. In only 2 patients, however, was there unequivocal change in colour. Both were men with brown hair and the change tended towards a return to the original colour. This change became apparent after both calcium pantothenate and p-aminobenzoic acid had been administered daily for a period of 2 to 3 months, and increased slowly in intensity until the experiment was terminated. In a group of 6 younger individuals who received the above dosage for 6 months, 2 who received the p-aminobenzoic scid and calcium pantothenate only, and 6 who received 20 mg. calcium pantothenate and 3.5 g. of concentrated yeast daily, Brandaleone. Main and Steele (1944, found that not one showed any decrease at all in the gray colour of their hair.

The conclusion appears justified that no adequate evidence of the value of p-aminobenzoic acid as an achromotrichia factor in both animals and man is yet available. These studies cannot, therefore, be quoted in support of the inclusion of p-aminobenzoic acid among the vitamins. The rapidity of excretion of p-aminobenzoic acid when 100mg. is taken by mouth (Experiment 3, pp.75-760f this thesis) suggests that the human organism deals with this substance as if it were a foreign toxic substance, rather than a

Page 107.

Further, it should be noted that the doses used vitamin. in these experiments are relatively high for a physiological action (Emerson, 1941), and that only about 6 mg. of p-aminobenzoic sold is present in 199 g. of brewer's yeast, which is about its richest source. Martin's work that p-aminobenzoic acid acts only indirectly on the animal organism through its intestinal flora, so that even although p-aminobenzoic acid cures achromotrichia it may not be an achromotrichia vitamin but merely stimulate bacteria to produce it - must also be borne in mind. He considers that in rats this vitamin. produced by p-aminobenzoic acid, is "folic acid". This subject is further considered in Chapter V.

Finally, it is worth recording that an editorial in the New England Journal of Medicine (1945, deplores the tendency in America for clinical exploitation of the results of laboratory investigations before those findings have been adequately substantiated, and quotes the widely publicised use of p-aminobenzoic acid for the restoration of the original dark colour of graying hair in man as an outstanding example. The position is summed up in the statement that in unimals achromotrichia is probably a multiple deficiency of p-aminobenzoic acid, pantothenic acid and inositol, and that the complete and rapid elimination of the p-aminobenzoic acid without practically any storage, as shown by various investigators, has not been taken adequately into account by some of those who advocate its use.

# p-Aminobenzoic acid and Chick Nutrition.

Anabacher (1941) reported that p-aminobenzoic acid was a growth factor for the chick and prolonged their survival times on a heated grain mixture supplemented with the fat-soluble vitemins A. D and K. the basic Bvitamina and inositol. It is to be noted that this diet was deficient in biotin. folic acid and other, as yet unidentified, factors as well. [Waisman, Mills and Ivehjem Ansbacher (1941a) further reported that the (1942)/.addition of p-aminobenzoic acid to a heated diet low in vitamin K, advanced the time of occurrence of the haemorrhagic diathesis typical of the hypoprothrombinaemia of the Eriggs, Luckey, Hills, Elvehjem and Hart(1943, baby chick. fonfirmed the fact that p-aminobenzoic acid produced growth responses in chicks receiving purified rations low in the unknown vitamins but complete in all other respects, but found that very high levels 5 - 15 mg. of p-aminobenzoic acid per 100 g. of diet were required. In addition. these workers found that solubilised liver had similar and. in fact, greater growth-promoting effects. Since the content of p-aminobenzoic acid in liver is only about 0.25 mg. per 100 g. ( Mitchell, Isbell and Thompson, 1943). Briggs and his co-workers considered that p-aminobenzoic acid produced its effects indirectly by synthesizing necessary unknown factors, and that the most logical manner of such production is through intestinal synthesis. This possibility was tested out in vitro by inoculating Mitchell and medium for the determination of "folic acid". Snell's

Page 109.

plus added amounts of p-aminobenzoic acid, with a mixed culture of organisms obtained from the duodenum of chicks. No attempt was, however, made to determine the various kinds of organisms contained in the mixed cultures. A medium for the determination of "folic acid" was chosen for this purpose because the properties and occurrence of "folic acid" are guite similar to the properties of the unknown factor or factors. The results showed that as the amount of p-aminobenzoic acid was raised, bacterial growth increased. This cannot be considered surprising since it is known that p-aminobenzoic acid is a growth factor for various micro-organisms. What is of greater significance is that as the growth increased, the synthesis of "folic acid increased approximately 3-fold. It is conceivable that other unknown factors may also be produced. Thus, when p-aminobenzoic acid is fed to chicks on dicts low in such factors, one can again conclude that it also causes the production by intestinal synthesis of "folic acid" and perhaps other unknown factors, and that these factors and not p-aminobenzoic acid are the essential, specific growth-promoting factors for the chick.

p-Aminobenzoic acid, Pertility and Lactation.

Sure (1941a,1941b; reported that there was complete failure of lactation in albino rats fed on a diet in which the vitamin B complex was supplied by pure thiamine, ribo-

Page 110.

flavin, pyridoxine, choline chloride, calcium pantothenate, nicotinic acid and a "?" factor from liver extracts. Apparently, therefore, some dietary factor was missing that was essential for lactation. The missing factor, called Ex. was found in rice polishings, defatted wheat embryo, dried grass and brewer's yeast, but was most abundant in liver and rice bran extracts, and when added to the diet resulted in an increase in the lectation efficiency from 5% to 67%, and a decrease in the percentage of stillbirths. Sure claimed that p-aminobenzoic acid was a component of the factor Bx although liver, which is one of the richest sources of Px, has a very low p-aminobenzoic acid content, and despite the fact that, in his earlier experiments, he obtained negative results when supplementing the diet with daily doses of 15 mg. of p-aminobenzoic acid. The relatively high dose is noteworthy. His earlier work also suggested that inositol may be a component, since it was effective in producing a lactation response. Nowever. when the """ factor was removed and only known components of the vitamin B complex fed, the same dose of p-aminobenzoic acid appeared to have beneficial results, but when p-aminobenzoic acid + inositol were added the lactation efficiency increased, although inositol on its own appeared to effect no improvement. In a later report (Sure, 1943) the same author reported that inositol had actually a pronounced injurious influence on lactation of the albino rat, which is counteracted by p-aminobenzoic acid, and that paminobenzoic acid itself had a markedly favourable in-

Page 111.

fluence. p-Aminobenzoic acid was fed in 3 mg. daily doses per animal for 4 weeks, then in 7.5 mm. daily doses during breeding and 15 mg. daily doses during pregnancy and lactation. The author remarks that on Mertin's theory the injurious effect of inositol may be due to its stimulation of the growth of micro-organisms which utilise and destroy another member of the vitamin B complex, or that it may interfere with the synthesis of blotin. folic acid or some other unknown member of the B complex. The response elicited by p-aminobenzoic acid could then be interpreted as supplying a factor essential for synthesis of such substances as biotin and folic acid. These have, however, to date not been shown to influence lactation. However, the evidence advanced by Sure of a lactation-inefficiency due to the absence of p-aminobenzoic acid in the dict cannot be considered conclusive and thus here again the status of p-aminobenzoic acid as a vitamin has not been established. It must also be recorded that Climenko and McChesney (1942, were unable to confirm all of Sure's results. They observed that 15mg. of p-sminobenzoic acid per rat per day delayed initiation of lactation; on the other hand, it did slightly decrease the mortality rates of newly-born rate.

Sieve (1942, also made a study of the effect of paminobenzoic acid in sterility in women. A group of 22 women who had been sterile for a minimum of 5 years were chosen. Their cases had been thoroughly studied and endocrinological deficiencies apparently excluded.

All had had utero-tubographs and Rubin tests, with normal findings. The husbands were found to be normal in every respect. All attempts at treatment had failed. p-Aminobenzoic acid was then given in doses of 100 mg. 4 times daily for 3-7 wonths and conception occurred in 12 of these cases - 54.5%. In 10 cases there was no response, but of these Sieve stated that 6 did not take medication as prescribed, 1 was complicated by old rheumatic heart disease, in another there was a possible tubal obstruction (although as mentioned above tests gave normal findings, and in still another a subtotal thyroidectomy for toxic goitre was done during p-aminobenzoic acid treatment. In only 1 case was p-aminobengoic acid treatment considered to be an absolute failure. In view of the small number of cases and the manifold difficulties in the investigation of sterility, particularly the satisfactory evaluation of endocrine and general metabolic factors. it appears justifiable to accept the claims of p-aminobenzoic acid to be an antisterility vitamin with considerable reserve.

Page 113.

#### SUMMARY

Since it is becoming more and more difficult to classify the vitamins into a distinct and well-defined group of compounds, the time appears to have come to discontinue the artificial separation of these compounds from other constituents of the diet and to classify them according to their chemical structure and functions in the body. Nevertheless the claims of p-aminobenzoic acid to be included among the vitamins are considered on the basis of various definitions including that of Ansbacher, the pioneer worker in this field, who considered it to be a member of the vitamin B complex since it has a similar distribution in nature.

That p-aminobenzoic acid produced deficiency symptoms was first reported by Ansbacher who found that is absence from the diet of rats resulted in achromotrichia. Various workers have, however, been unable to confirm Anabacher's observations. Martin attempted to harmonies the Sonflicting observations by suggesting that p-aminobenzoic acid acted only indirectly on the animal organism through its intestinal flora. which implies that even although p-aminobenzoic acid cures achromotrichia it is not the achromotrichic vitamin but merely stimulates intestinal bacteria to produce it. As far as graying of the hair in man is concerned, there is again disagreement and the conclusion appears justified that no adequate svidence of the value of p-aminobenzoic acid as an achromotrichial factor in both animals and man is yet available. Further, it should be noted that the doses used in these experiments are relatively high, and that the complete and rapid elimination of p-aminobenzoic acid without practically any storage suggests that the human

Page 214.

organism deals with it as if it were a foreign toxic substance rather than a vitamin. Ansbacher also reported that p-aminobenzoic acid was a growth factor for the chick and delayed the time of development of the basmorrhagic digthesis following vitamin K deficiency. However, these effects also require very high levels of p-aminobenzoic acid, and other workers have again concluded that p-aminobenzoic acid produces its effects indirectly by stimulating the synthesis of necessary unknown factors including "folic acid". Sure reported that an absence of p-aminobenzoic acid in the dist produced lactation inefficiency in rate and increased the percentage of stillbirths. The results have, however, not been adequately confirmed and again appear to be an indirect effect, requiring relatively large doses, on the intestinal micro-organisms to produce other compounds influencing lactation. Sieve also claimed that p-aminobenzoic acid had beneficial effects on sterility in women but in view of the small number of cases and the manifold difficulties in the investigation of sterility, it appears justifiable to accept the claims of p-aminobenzoic acid to be an anti-sterility vitamin with considerable reserve.

The evidence that p-aminobenzoic acid produces deficiency symptoms — perhaps the most important criterion of a vitamin is, therefore, inconclusive and conflicting. Any action that it appears to have is believed by most workers to be indirect, and on the intestinal micro-organisms rather than on the animal itself. This explanation accords well with the firmly-established effects of p-aminobenzoic acid on micro-organisms for many of which it has been shown to be either an essential metabolite or a growth factor.

Page 114a.

Regarding the physiological effectiveness of p-aminobenzoic acid in minute amounts — another generally accepted characteristic of vitamins — the reported work shows that the quantities required to remove deficiency effects are far greater than those ingested in a normal diet. Further, the fact that it appears to be formed by the intestinal organisms, (as well as acting on them), indicates that it may not even be necessary in the diet, and that its occurrence in various organs and body fluids is due to its absorption from the intestinal tract.

It appears legitimate to conclude that p-aminobenzoic acid is a growth-factor for bacteria, yeasts and fungi, but that it does not fulfil the requirements for a vitamin as given in any of the definitions in this chapter.

#### CHAPTER V.

THE PHYSIOLOGICAL SIGNIFICANCE OF P-ARINOBENZOIC ACID IN HICHER ANIMALS AND MAN.

Although the status of p-aminobenzoic acid ás a vitamin for higher animals and man cannot be considered as established, there is no doubt that it is of considerable physiological significance and occurs widely in nature.

#### Occurrence.

p-Aminobenzoic acid is apparently as widely distributed as the vitamin B complex. The quantities present, however, are small in all foodstuffs including yeast, which is by far the richest source, and from which it was first isolated by Eubbo and Gillespie (1940, as the benzoyl derivative. Ansbacher (1944,p.242) claimed that paminobenzoic acid occurred in three forms - "unbound paminobenzoic acid" or "free p-aminobenzoic acid"; "conjugated p-aminobenzoic acid", which was mainly, if not entirely, p-acetylaminobenzoic acid; and "bound p-aminobenzoic acid" which represented p-aminobenzoic acid associated with carriers, such as proteins, or p-aminobenzoic acid combined with other compounds, possibly peptides or

2

amino acida. As far as I am aware, however, no direct evidence exists for the cocurrence of "bound p-aminobenzoic acid" in these forms. In the following table, the occurrence of p-aminobenzoic acid in the commoner foodstuffs and in some animal tissues and fluids is listed. It should be noted that only very few workers have reported assays of p-aminobenzoic acid in different materials.

1.4.7

Material.	p-Aminobenzo: in micrograms gramme. Free.		Reference.			
Milk	0.08	0.1-0.4	Mitchell, Isbell and Thompson, (1943).			
Des yolk	0.8	Lago in	Lewis (1942].			
leg albumin	0.06	1	*			
kice bran	2-3	9-16	H			
wheat, whole	0.25	0.8	Mitchell, Isbell and Thompson (1943)			
heat germ	0.5	1.8	Thompson (1943).			
AsparaLus	1.15	2.0	Lewis (1942).			
(Dried juic concentrate		191				
lried	9.7	13.9				
Cabbage.	- T 6	1.35				
Dried carrot	e. 0.18	0.43				
Potato	0.3	0.4 }	Fisansky and Ansbacher, Quoted from Ansbacher			
teres - juic			(1944, p.239).			
Spinach	0.12	0.6				
least (cake)	3.6	4.0	Mitchell, Isbell and Thompson (1943).			
" (Baker's		5.0	Blanchard (1941)			

#### Page 117.

1. 1. 2. 2. 1 p-Aminobenzoic acid in micrograms per Reference. Material. gramme. NEWS LARE I A P 1402 DE Total. Free. the second starts and an Yeast (Brewer's) 6.6-61.0 9.3-59.0. Lewis (1942.. 10 TO IT ISAN TOMA !! Yeast (Autolyzed, 7.4 12.0 Ycast services the second manufactor as (Extract) 157 156 contract that the second three is the provident Flood (Human) 0.035 - Landy and Dicken (1942). Little Park and Calenda Stream, " and mer-Blood 0.27 Mitchell, Isbell and 0.06 (Ret she and she was a start of the start of Thompson (1943). Elood (Ox, 0.0004 ) Lewis (1942). Urine the first of the state of (Human) 0.014-0.021 0.35-0.49 In the same the same 14 5 0.02 Mitchell, Isbell and 0.5 Thompson (1943. Landy and Dicken(1942). 0.015 the is included and added the 2.5 Witchell. Isbell and Beef Liver 0.2 Thompson (1943). Beef muscle 0.3 Rat. 0.15 6 1.7 Ret brain 0.14 0.7 Ret heart 0.15 1.35 Ret kidney 0.13 1.8 Pork 0.3 0.8 and the state of the Property of the Property

C

#### Fage 116.

The table shows that only minute amounts of p-aminobenzoic acid occur in various foodstuffs. The great disparity baween the quantity of p-aminobenzoic acid in yeast and in other sources has been ascribed to the fact that yeast. like other microorganisms, synthesizes p-aminobenzoic acid which is an essential metabolite for its growth and development. The question thus arises whether the negligible amounts of p-aminobenzoic acid which have been found in various animal tissues and fluids do not simply represent an absorbed part of the p-aminobenzoic acid synthesized by the intestinal bacteria. As far as I am aware this possibility has not been considered heretofore. Point is lent to this hypothesis by Landy's finding that dried human facces contained 4-12 micrograms of free p-aminobenzoic acid/gramme of faeces, more than 100 times the quantity in the urine (quoted from Ansbacher 1944, p.241. It is probable that this p-aminobenzoic acid was synthesized by the intestinal organisms since the quantities in foods are small and what p-aminobenzoic acid is present would be very rapidly absorbed from the small intestine. Further, Ahlström, v. Euler and Wallerström (1942) noted that after a dose of sulphapyridine, the liver and urine of rats contained no p-aminobenzoic acid.

#### INTESTINAL SYNTHESIS OF P-AMINOBENZOIC ACID.

The possibility that the negligible amounts of p-aminobenzoic acid excreted in the urine is formed in the intestine during bacterial growth and is not derived from the food, has been overlooked by other workers.

The following experiment, which also appears to be the first in vivo observation of the synthesis of p-aminobenzoic acid by intestinal organisms, was therefore undertaken in an attempt medium.

2.2.45.

Experiment 10. Synthesis of p-Aminobenzoic Acid by Intestinal Bacteria of Man.

# Princhle:

Sulphaguanidine, which is a known bacteriostatic drug on intestinal bacteria and is only very slightly absorbed from the intestine, was taken by mouth for several days, during which time 24-hour specimens of urine were collected, concentrated and assayed for p-aminobenzoic scid. After a few days on sulphaguanidine, specimens of faeces were tested for sterility daily.

Subject B.B.

2.2.45 to	1	24-hour	specimens	of uri	ine colleo	ted for 3	days
to	>	before	sulphaguant	dine t	restment	commenced	æ
5.2.45.	1	Urines	A, B, C.		101 40 7	<ol> <li>an 250</li> </ol>	

5.2.45. Sulphaguanidine course commenced with 0.1g./Kg. body weight, followed by 0.05g./Kg. 4 times daily.

Subject's weight: 135 lbs. - approximately 61 Kilogrammes. Hence doses of sulphaguanidine taken were 6 g. followed by 3 g. 4 times daily. Continued for 7 days to 11.2.45., during which time 24-hour specimens of Urine D, E, F, C, H, J collected. Following cessation of sulphaguanidine treatment, urine collected for further 24 hours = Urine K. Maeces tested for sterility from 7.2.45 to 11.2.45 daily = Paeces P, G, H, J, K.

## Method of Urine concentration.

The 24-hour specimen of urine was evaporated on a boiling-

Page 120.

water bath to the consistency of a thick syrup. Evaporation was assisted by a fan blowing hot air across the evaporation dish. The residue was extracted with 10% NaHCOz (about 1/20) volume of original urine). and the extract filtered into a separating funnel. (fince p-aminobenzoic acid is soluble in alkali, it is in this way dissolved out and separated from much of the solid constituents of the urine). The filtrate was acidified with concentrated HCl to a pH of 3 and extracted with about 1 litre of ether in 100-200 cc. quantities. (p-Aminobenzoic acid is extracted by ether from an acid solution, whereas any sulphaguanidine which might have been present in the urine is left behind since it is insoluble in acid-ether). The combined ether extracts were then placed in an evaporating dish and the ether evaporated off. leaving a watery residue. Since this still contained some of the original solid matter of the urine. 250 c.c. hot rectified apirits was added to the residue to dissolve out the p-aminobenzoic and the solution filtered, leaving most of the solid matter behind. The alcoholic extract was now evaporated almost to dryness on a boiling water bath, the residue taken up in a few o.c. of 1. NaHCO3, filtered, the pH adjusted to 7 and the volume made up to 1/50 of original volume of the urine.

Assay of the concentrated urines for p-aminobenzoic acid was carried out as previously described.

### Testing of Faeces for Sterility.

1 : 10, 1: 100, 1 : 1000 and 1 : 10,000 dilutions of the facees were made in sterile normal saline and each dilution tested for the presence of viable bacteria by inoculation into nutrient broth and McConkey lactose-bile salts-neutral red-agar medium. Footnote. + No p-aminobenzoic acid detectable in 1 oc. of concentrated uring by method used. This indicates that p-aminobenzoic acid content of such urines less than 0.002 micrograms/c.c.

.

24-hr. Period.	Urine speci-	Excretion o	on of			Viable	e bacteri	a in Faeces.	es.		
	men. (c.c.)	zoic acid in micrograms.	id in .	W	Nutrient	Broth.			McConkey's	agar.	
-		Free.	Acet.	1:10	1:100	1:1000	1:10000	1:10	1:100 ]	1:1000	1:10000
*	1360	+W11	54	Not	ted.	Not tested.	Not tested.	Not tested.	Not	tested.	Not tested.
	860	+N11	17	4		3	1	1		1	
a 	1000	+N11	40	=	2	=		*		3	
Sulph	Sulphaguanidine	ne course	1	commenced.							-
9	0461	+N11	39	a	=	:	2	4	3	4	2
F	1120	+N11	J	. <b>1</b> 2	2	3	1	5		3	3
4	780	+N11	w	Heavy growth	Heavy growth	Heavy growth	Heavy growth			Numerous	umerous
ဂ	1400	+N11	+N11	4	*	1	3	""	108.	2	1
H	680	+N11	+N11	3	3	4	=	Few	N11	N11	N11
ધ	600	+N11	+N11	+N11 Moder - S ate growth.	Slight growth	Slight growth	N11	310	one colony		=
Sulph	Sulphanuanidine	ne course		đ.							
X	780	21		Slight	Slight	NII	NIL	Few	One colony	NIL	11N

" Page 121.

Though the assay method used is only roughly quantitative as has already been mentioned, and the figures shown for the excretion of p-aminobenzoic acid in experiment 10 can be considered only as approximate, there appears to be no doubt that as the bacteriostatic effect of the sulphaguanidine increases, there is a marked drop in the quantity of p-aminobenzoic acid excreted in the urine. It is. therefore, contended that this experiment clearly shows that the traces of p-aminobenzoic acid excreted in the urine of normal human beings can be considered to originate in the intestine, where it is produced during the growth and multiplication of the intestinal bacterial flora. Experiment 8. in which it is shown that p-aminobenzoic acid can be absorbed from the rectum and pelvic colon. supports this contention.

#### Relationship of p-aminobenzoic acid and Intestinal

#### Pacterial Synthesis.

Recent work has shown that part of an animal's daily requirements of vitamins - notably of members of the vitamin B complex, namely thiamine, riboflavin, mbotinic acid, inositol, pantothenic acid, biotin and folic acid, and also of vitamin K - is synthesized within that animal's own intestine by its bacterial flora. Deficiency diseases have also resulted from the failure of these bacteria to grow and synthesize vitamins.

These observations taken in conjunction with the facts that p-aminobenzoic acid is an essential metabolite for many bacteria and is actually a growth factor for some bacteria

#### Page 123.

suggest that p-aminobenzoic acid may exert its major physiological function in higher animals and man by an indirect stimulating action on the intestinal bacterial flora to produce the several vitamins which they have been shown to synthesize, and whose importance in the mammalian organism is well-established. The above demonstration that excreted p-aminobenzoic acid in man is derived from its synthesis by bacteria in the intestine, coupled with its unproven importance as a vitamin in higher animals, lends strong support to this theory.

Martin (1942b) was the first to interpret his own experimental findings and those of others as indicating that p-aminobenzoic acid played its major role in altering the flora of the intestinal tract. Such a theory would also explain the effect of inclusion of sulphonamides in synthetic diets. For example, Mackenzie, Mackenzie and McCollum (1941) and Black, McKibbin and Elvehjem (1941) showed that growth of rats treated with sulphaguanidine was suppressed and that p-aminobenzoic acid reversed this growth-inhibitory effect of sulphaguanidine. On the above hypothesis, sulphaguanidine could be considered to exert its effect mainly on the intestinal bacteria, preventing them synthesizing vitamins and p-aminobenzoic acid by stimulating the growth of these bacteria and providing an essential metabolite for their development, increases their vitamin synthesis, so reversing the sulphaguanidine effect.

In chapter IV attention was drawn to the experimental findings of various investigators which indicated that the

Page 124.

effects of p-aminobenzoic acid, on which its claim to status as a vitamin in human and animal nutrition rests namely chromotrichial action in man and rats, growth and development of chicks, increased feltility in man and the rat and lactation efficiency in the rat - were adequately explained by its stimulating action on the intestinal bacterial flora, producing various vitamins which are mainly responsible for these effects.

It is, therefore, concluded that <u>the major physiolog-</u> <u>ical functions so far attributed to p-aminobenzoic acid</u> <u>are carried out indirectly in man and animals by virtue</u> <u>of its proven role in the metabolism of the micro-organisms</u> <u>which live symbotically in the intestinal tract of such</u> <u>animals.</u> Whether the physiological actions of p-aminobenzoic acid are <u>entirely</u> indirect through intestinal synthesis of various vitamins, or whether p-aminobenzoic acid has in addition other direct effects, remains, however, unsettled. Certain of its properties and effects suggest that it might also have direct functions, but whether these can be considered physiological is, at best, doubtful.

# Direct Effects of p-Aminobenzoic acid on the Mammalian Organism.

(a) Correlation of p-aminobenzoic acid with Sunburn.

Rothman (1926) showed that the p-aminobenzoic acid derivative procaine selectively absorbed the rays of the sun which caused persistent erythema of the skin and pigmentation. Later, Behagel, Rothman and Schultze (1928)

found that the selective absorption of the Dorno rays was caused by p-aminobenzoic acid or its derivatives, namely by compounds with an amino- and a carboxyl-group in para position on the benzene ring, including p-aminobenzoic acid with substituted hydrogen atoms of either or both polar groups. Eird (1942, also found that aqueous solutions of local anaesthetic bases derived from p-amino benzoic acid showed strong absorption of ultraviolet light in the wave-length band 2700-3200 Angstrom units, and concluded that most surface anaesthetics of this type offer interesting possibilities in the preparation of "filters" for the crythema producing rays, i.e. as "sunscreen" preparations. Rothman and Rubin (1942) also prepared a product extremely effective against sunburn by incorporating p-aminobenzoic acid in ointment bases.

The ultraviolet absorption of p-aminobenzoic acid is maximum at 2785 Angstrom units, but at 3000 Angstrom units its absorption is still very great (Rothman and Rubin, 1942), so that the ultraviolet absorption curve of p-aminobenzoic acid completely covers the range of ultraviolet light rays which have a "sunburn action", the maximum effect of which is at 2975 Angstrom units.

Blum (1941; divided the photochemical theory of sunburn action, i.e. the action of the sun's rays on the skin, into two parts:

 A substance is present in the photosensitive layers of the skin, the absorption spectrum of which is identical with or similar to the "sunburn action" spectrum; (2) This substance absorbs the effective Dorno rays, is photochemically altered, and its reaction product causes erythema.

Ansbacher (1944, p.217) points out that p-aminobenzoic acid fulfils these conditions, ile. it is capable or producing erythema when irradiated in saline solution and injected subcutaneously, its absorption spectrum is similar to, or identical with, the "sunburn action" spectrum, and it is reasonably certain that p-aminobenzoic acid is a natural constituent of the skin (although there is no experimental support). He concludes, therefore, that p-aminobenzoic acid or one of its derivatives may be the substance responsible for the reddening and darkening of the skin resulting from exposure to the rays of the sun.

(b) Relationship of p-Aminobenzoic acid to Hormones.

Sieve's (1942) report of some correlation between the actions of p-aminobenzoic acid and the sex hormones has already been reviewed (pll1). He claimed that paminobenzoic acid increased fertility in the female, stimulated libido and re-established the menses in cases of amenorrhoea, and caused a great improvement in potency in the male.

Astwood (1943a) found that certain aniline derivatives, including p-aminobenzoic acid and the sulphonamides, inhibited the function of the thyroid gland in young rats when administered in the food or drinking water for a period of 10 days. A daily dose of about 200 mg. p-aminobenzoic

#### Page 126.

acid/100g. of body weight was required for a full effect. It is possible that these aniline derivatives owe their activity to their structural similarity to tyrosine, and as a working hypothesis it is suggested that these compounds act through a competitive mechanism in the enzyme system responsible for the conversion of di-iodotyrosine to thyroxin. The large dosage required is noteworthy and indicates that this effect is more properly classed as a toxic effect rather than a physiological one.

Thiourea derivatives have a similar effect on thyroid function, and are possibly also specific inhibitors of this same system. From a clinical point of view, however, in the treatment of hyperthyroidisin, thiourea and thiouracil have been shown to be the most promising compounds (Astwood, 1943b).

p-Aminobenzoic acid has also been shown to be capable of inhibiting the destruction of adrenaline (Ansbacher, 1944, p.299), an effect which it shares with other benzoates, some of which in fact are even more active. Here again, therefore, it appears to be unlikely that p-aminobenzoic acid has this function under physiological conditions.

Ansbacher and his co-workers also claimed (Ansbacher, 1944, p.299) that p-aminobenzoic acid potentiated the action of insulin. When injected subcutaneously into mice in a dose of 1/6 unit per 18 g. of body weight, insulin did not reduce the blood sugar to convulsive levels. When, however, p-aminobenzoic acid was given with the insulin,

Page 128.

hypoglycaemic convulsions were produced. p-Aminobenzoic acid itself in doses of 1 to 2 g. per kg. body weight in dogs produced a mild hyperglycaemia, and also depleted the glycogen reserves of the liver.

Martin (1943) suggested that these actions of p-aminobenzoic acid might be motivated via the pituitary and production of thyrotropic hormone, being supported in this view by Mackenzie and Mackenzie (1943) and Astwood, Sullivan Bissell and Tyslowitz (1943), who found that the thyroid-enlarging effect of the sulphonamides and thioureas is probably mediated through the anterior pituitary. Whether these effects of p-aminobenzoic acid are of any significance in the physiology of the normal animal awaits further investigation. In view of the large doses of paminobenzoic acid required to demonstrate these actions of p-aminobenzoic acid, the conclusion again appears justifiable that these are not normal functions of this simple primary amine.

Page 129.

#### SUMMARY.

The quantities of p-aminobenzoic acid reported to occur in various foodstuffs is small. Yeast is by far the richest source, this probably being due to the fact that yeast, like other micro-organisms, synthesizes p-aminobenzoic acid, which is an essential metabolite for its growth and development. This suggests the possibility, overlooked by previous workers, that the negligible amounts of p-aminobenzoic acid present in various animal tissues and fluids, and finally excreted in the urine, is also derived from bacterial growth in the intestine and not from the food. This hypothesis was, therefore, tested by studying the excretion of p-aminobenzoic acid after preventing intestinal bacterial growth by oral doses of sulphaguanidine. The marked drop in the quantity of p-aminobenzoic acid excreted shows that the traces of p-aminobenzoic present in the urine of normal human subjects can be considered to originate in the intestine where it is produced during the growth and multiplication of the bacterial flora. It has already been shown that p-aminobanzoic acid can be absorbed from the large intestine.

These facts, coupled with the unproven role of p-aminobenzoic acid as a vitamin in higher animals and man, and its importance as an essential metabolite for some bacteria and actual growth factor for others, suggest that <u>p-aminobenzoic</u> <u>acid exerts its major physiological functions by an indirect</u> <u>stimulating action on the intestinal bacterial flora to produce the several vitamins which they have been shown to synthesize, and whose importance in the mammalian organism is well established.</u> Certain of the properties and effects of p-aminobenzoic acid, however, suggest that it might also have direct functions. Thus it has been considered to be responsible for the reddening and darkening of the skin resulting from exposure to the rays of the sun. p-Aminobenzoic acid has also been shown to bear a relationship to endocrine function. It inhibits the function of the thyroid gland and the destruction of adrenaline in the body and potentiates the action of the sex hormones and insulin. However, in view of the large doses of p-aminobenzoic acid required to demonstrate these actions, it is concluded that these are not normal functions of this simple primary amine.

#### OHAPTHR VI.

# CN THE RESISTANCE OF ANIMALS TO DISEASE.

During the course of a study on the comparative effects of p-aminobenzoic acid on E. coli and other gram-negative intestinal bacteria of the typhoid, paratyphoid, dysentery, and food-poisoning groups, it was noted that large quantities of p-aminobenzoic acid appeared to inhibit growth of the typhoid and paratyphoid organisms to a larger extent than the others. That p-aminobenzoic acid could itself act as an inhibitor to bacterial growth in concentrations above these which antagonised sulphonamide inhibition is wellknown (Chapter I.pp.18.19.25). However, in view of the possible therapeutic value of p-aminobenzoic acid in typhoid fever, for which no active chemotherapeutic agent is as yet available. it was decided to extend these in vitro findings to experimentally produced typhoid infection in mice. Although the results were disappointing, a curious observation was made - namely that p-aminobenzoic acid administered to mice for some time before inoculating them with B. typhosus apparently diminished their susceptibility to infection. Since untreated typhoid infection in mice is an acute, rapidly-fatal, septicaemia, experiments were also carried out to determine the therapeutic potentialities of p-aminobenzoic acid in chronic infections and guinea-pig tuberculosis was selected for study since here, too, chemotherapy has as yet not made great strides. Tuberculosis in the guinea-pig is a fairly chronic and relatively simple progressive disease, with neither native nor acquired resistance apparently playing any part, so that any differences between

#### Page 131.

untreated and treated animals could reasonably be attributed to treatment. Such differences, though not dramatic, were easily apparent, and treated animals appeared to be less ill, showed a greater gain in weight and tended to survive longer than did the control animals. Thus again p-aminobenzoic acid, although therapeutically disappointing, appeared to increase the resistance to infection.

Further experiments have shown that p-aminobenzoic acid in large doses apparently neither increases the phagocytic activity of the reticulo-endothelial system nor increases the titre of circulating antibodies produced by injection of an antigen. It therefore seems probable that p-aminobenzoic acid exerts its effect in some way on the natural immunity or "resistance" of the animal.

In the following sections the experimental evidence for the above statements will be detailed and an attempt made to evaluate their significance.

## EPTECT OF "LARCE" AMOUNTS OF P-AMINOBLN CIC ACTD ON CULTURES OF B. COLI AKI VARIOUS PATHOGENIC INTESTINAL BACTERIA.

It has already been shown that a few micrograms of p-aminobenzoic acid is sufficient to promote the growth of E. coli in a purely synthetic basal culture medium to which one thousand times as much sulphapyridine has been added. To test the effect of "large" amounts of p-aminobenzoic acid, it was decided to add 0.01, - 1, quantities to the culture medium. Since the basal medium used in the previous experiments was found to be unable to support the growth of some of the pathogenic intestinal bacteria, McConkey's lactose-bile salts-neutral red-nutrient agar medium was used. This medium was selected since it is one

of the standard selective media for the growth of B. coli, B. typhosus causing typhoid fever, B. paratyphosus A. B and C. all of which may cause paratyphoid fever. B enteritidis and B. typhimurium which cause food-poisoning, B. dysenteriae shiga, B. paradysenteriae flexner and B. paradysenteriae sonne, responsible for bacillary dysentery. The effect of p-aminobenzoic acid on the growth of all these organisms is shown in experiment 11. The tabulated results show clearly that whereas the growth of B. coli is not affected until a 1, concentration of p-aminobenzoic acid is present in the culture medium. the growth of B. typhosus, B. paratyphosus A, and B. paratyphosus B are already slightly affected by a C.CL, concentration. Purther, the growth of B. typhosus is markedly diminished or inhibited by a concentration of 0.15. The other organisms also show varying degrees of inhibition which is most obvious in the paratyphoid group and least marked in the dysenteric group.

18Le 132.

11.4.45.

Experiment 11.	EFFECT OF 0.015 - 14 P-AMINOBENZOIC ACID ON
	B. COLL, TYPECID, PARATYPHOLD, FUDD-FUISON-
PERCENT PROPERTY	ING AND DYSERTERY ORGANISMS.

Plates of McConkey media containing C.Cl., C.1%, C.5% and 1% of p-aminobenzoic acid were prepared as follows:-

55 g. of Difeo McConkey powder consisting of

three is	Eacto-Bile Salts	3 8.
	Bacto-lactose	10 g.
	Eacto-peptone	20 8.
	Sodium Chloride	5 8.
	Bacto-Agar	17 8.
	Bacto-Neutral Red	0.03 8.

was suspended in cold water, boiled for 1-2 minutes and the required amounts of 2% p-aminobenzoic acid solution in normal sodium hydroxide added. The pH was then adjusted to  $\pm 7.3$ , and the volume made up to 1 litre. The solution was then sutoclaved at 15 lbs. pressure for 20 minutes, poured into sterile petri dishes, cooled and allowed to set. To economise on the number of plates required 20-25 tests were conducted on each plate.

Organisms tested.

1.	Bacterium	coli or Esche	eri	chi	la coli.		
2.	Bacterium	typhesus or 1	be	rtl	ella typho:	38.	
3.	Eacterium	paratyphosus	â	or	Salmonella		
4.	\$3	学道	В	$\mathbf{or}$	ŦŦ	schotmülle	eri.
5.		*	C	or	79	hirschfeld	ăii.
6.	64	enteritidis		or	" ente	eritidis Ga	ertner.
7.	69	aertrycke		or	9 <b>F</b>	typhimuriu	100 .
8.	<b>90</b>	shigae		or	Shigella di	ysenteriae	shiga.
9.	24	flexneri		or	" parad	ysenteriae	flexner.
10.	3¢	sonnei		or	17	11	sonne.

Nutrient broth cultures (incubated for 24 hours at  $37^{\circ}C$ .) of all the organisms were tested by inoculating one platinum loopful of each culture (in-diluted and diluted 10, 100, 1000 and 10,000 times with sterile normal saline) on the surfaces of the various

#### Fage 134.

McConkey media. The various dilutions were prepared so as to test out the effect of the different concentrations on p-aminobenzoic acid when small and large numbers of organisms were inoculated. After inoculation the plates were incubated for 48 hours.

The following table shows the results obtained in one of these experiments.

17125		Medium	i in McCon 1 plus 10benzoic			growth in Conkey Me with no p sminobenz acid	dium 
Organism	Dilution	0.01	0.17	0.5%	1.0%	Contro	1.
E.coli	Indiluted	Geod	6000	Good	Nil	Gnođ	
D. CULL	1:10	4	N N	4i	62	12	
	1:100	H	17	11	48	23	
	1:1000	M	16	68	32		
	1:10000		10	<b>Fi</b>	Н		
B.ty-	Undiluted	Geod	Slight	Slight	Nil	bood	
phosus	1:10	718	82	Nil	**	14	
	1:100	84	Nil	ы	12 14	24	
	1:1000	Slight	84	43	52	12	
	1:10000	Slight_	R	11			
B.peraty-	Undiluted	Grod	Crod	Slight	KIL	Ccod	2
phosus	1:10	58	Slight	19	18	52 53	
Γ. A	1:100	819	Nil	Nil	44	99	
	1:1000	17	н ,	18	69	si	
	1:10000	Slight	11	21	39	14	
B.para-	Undiluted	Good	Good	Good	N11	Good	
typhoeus	1:10	+#	44	-	64	ŧø	
B	1:100	77	Slight	Sligh		22	
1. The second	1:1000	77	**	17	17	¥#	
-	1:10000	Slight	- 13	<u>N11</u>	34	17	-
B.para-	Undiluted	Good	Good	Good	Nil	Good	
typhesus	1:10	49	Slight	Slight	69	45	
C	1:100	9 <b>3</b>	N11	H	69	18	100
~	1:1000	10	48	11	48	11	
72	1:1:00			Ni1			
B.enteri-	Undiluted	Good	Godã	Good	N11	5000	
tidis -	1:10 1:100	98	Slight	Slight		11	
	1:1009		Nil	NIL	11		
	1:10000	18	13	19 19	19	19	
D. diam		0	Can 3	() ×	1.1.1	()	
B.aer-	Undihied	0cod	Good	000d	Nil	Good	
trycke	1:10 1:100	**	Slight		12	E.	
	1:1000	51	12	Slight	19		
	1:10000	**	N11	N11	78	£8	
B.shigae	Undiluted	Good	Good	Grod	Nil	Good	
er brieber	1:10	11	11	19	H .	H	
	1:100	97.	19	21	+7		-
45.00	1:1000	6	Elight	Slight	9	84	
40.80	1:10000	3.9	Nil	Nil	ŧ	5 <b>B</b>	
B.flexneri		Good	Good	Good	Nil	Good	
	1:10	\$2	5W	-	28	- 14	
	1:100	, <u>8</u> a	Slight	Slight	H.	19	
	1:1000	t?	41	N11	54	ŧġ	
	1:1:006	99	38	13	н	68	
B.sonnei	Undiluted	Geod	Good	Good	Nil	Geod	
	1:10	48	8.8	99	42	94	
	1:100	10 - 9	Slight	+±	19	N	
	1:1.00	rt -	H	4	99	- 49	
	1:10000	12	19	Slight	14	28	

. .

1.4.1

Fage 136.

### Experiment 12. EFFECT OF 0.1%-1% SULPHAPYRIDINE ON B.COLI, TYPECIL, PARATY FOID, POOL-POILONING AND DYSENTERIC ORGANISES.

Experimental details as in experiment 11. In place of p-aminobenzoic acid, the required amounts of 10% sodium sulphapyridine in distilled water were added.

Grganiss Filution. 0.1s       0.50       ks       (Cerrel)         B.coli       Undlited Cood       Good       Good       Good         1:100       """"""""""""""""""""""""""""""""""""	(a	Section 1		lphapyri		Growth in Mc- Conkey medium
1:10         """"""""""""""""""""""""""""""""""""	Grganism				13	
1:100         "         "         "           1:100         "         "         "         "           b.typhosus         Undlluted         Göod         Good         Good         Good           1:100         "         "         "         "         "         "           1:100         "         "         "         "         "         "           1:100         "         "         "         "         "         "           b.para-         Undlluted         Göod         Good         Good         Good         Good           1:100         "         "         "         "         "         "         "           1:100         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "           1:1000         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "	B.coli	Undiluted	Good	Good	Good	Good
<pre>hildoo hildoo hildoo b.typhosus mailuted Good hild hildo hild</pre>	- 1 - m			14	9 E	ά¢.
1:10,000       "       STight       Clight       "         B. typhosus       Galluted       Good       Good       Good       Good         1:100       "       "       "       "       "       "         B. para-       Undiluted       Good       Good       Good       Good       Good       Good         B. para-       Undiluted       Good       Good       Good       Good       Good       Good         Tilo,000       "       "       "       "       "       "       "         A       1:100       "       "       "       "       "       "       "         A       1:100       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "		1:100	N 14	88 	16	11
1:10.000         "         STight         Elight         "           b. typhosus         Unilluted         Good         Good         Good         Good           1:100         "         "         "         "         "         "           1:100         "         "         "         "         "         "         "           1:100         "         "         "         "         "         "         "           b.para-         Undluted         Good         Good         Good         Good         Good         "         "           b.para-         Undluted         Good         Good <td></td> <td>1:1000</td> <td>٩£</td> <td>¥\$</td> <td>54</td> <td>\$\$</td>		1:1000	٩£	¥\$	54	\$\$
b. typhosus       badiluted       000d       000d       000d       000d         1:10       """"""""""""""""""""""""""""""""""""	and in an			Slight	flight	14
1:10       """"""""""""""""""""""""""""""""""""	a. typhosus		Göod			Good
1:100         """"""""""""""""""""""""""""""""""""	art all button and			4		
1:1000     """"""""""""""""""""""""""""""""""""			2.6	S14cht	slicht	18
l:10,000         Nil         "         "           B.para-         Undiluted         Good         Good         Good         Good           A         1:100         "         "         Nil         "           A         1:100         "         "         Nil         "           A         1:100         "         "         Nil         "           A         1:100         "         "         "         "           I.100,000         Slight         "         "         "         "           B         1:100         "         "         "         "           B         1:100         "         "         "         "           B.para-         Undiluted         Good         Good         Good         Good         Good           1:1000         "         "         "         "         "         "         "           B.enteri-         Gniluted         Good         Good         Good         Good         Good         Good         Good           1:1000         "         "         "         "         "         "         "           b.enteri-	1		10	5 1.2 da 4 (5 6 4 14 15	-14 -14	19
B. para-       Undiluted       Geod       Geod       Geod       Geod       Geod         A       1:10       "       Slight       Slight       Slight       "         A       1:100       "       "       Nil       "       "         1:100       "       "       Nil       "       "       "         b. para-       Undiluted       Geod       Geod       Geod       Geod       Geod         B       1:100       "       "       "       "       "       "         B       1:100       "       "       "       "       "       "       "         B. para-       Undiluted       Geod       Geod       Geod       Geod       Geod       Geod       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "			12	10.4.7	4.6	2.8
typhosus       1:10       "       Slight       Slight       "         A       1:100       "       Ni1       "       "         1:100,000       Slight       "       "       "       "         B.para-       Undiluted       Good       Good       Good       Good       Good         B       1:100       "       "       "       "       "         B.para-       Undiluted       Good       Good       Good       Good       Good       Good         1:1000       "       "       "       "       "       "       "         C       1:100       "       "       "       "       "       "         C       1:100       "       "       "       "       "       "         C       1:100       "       "       "       "       "       "       "         E.enteri-       Undiluted       Good			Cista A			Cood
Typhosus 1:10 " " " " " " " " " " " " " " " " " " "						
A       11200       N11       "       "         1:10.000       Slight       "       "       "         b.para-       Undiluted       Good       Good       Good       Good         b.para-       Undiluted       Good       Good       Good       Good       Good         b.para-       Indiluted       Good       Good       Good       Good       Good       Good         1:100       "       "       "       "       "       "       "         B.para-       Indiluted       Good       G	* *		2	slight		
11000       N11       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       " </td <td>A</td> <td></td> <td></td> <td></td> <td></td> <td></td>	A					
1100,000       511,000       600d       600d       600d         1100       1100       1100       1100       1100       1100         1100,000       1100       1100       1100       1100       1100         1100,000       1100       1100       1100       1100       1100         1100,000       1100       1100       1100       1100       1100         C       1100       1100       1100       1100       1100       1100         C       1100       1100       1100       1100       11000       11000       11000         11000       1100       1100       11000       11000       11000       11000       11000         11000       11000       1100       11000       11000       11000       11000       11000       11000       11000       11000       11000       11000       11000       11000       11000       11000       11000       11000       11000       11000       11000       11000       11000       11000       11000       11000       11000       11000       11000       11000       11000       11000       11000       11000       110000       110000       110000       1			1			
typhosus       1:10       """"""""""""""""""""""""""""""""""""		1:10,000	Slight		- #	11
typhosus       1:10       """"""""""""""""""""""""""""""""""""	B.para-			Good	600 d	
B       1:100       """"""""""""""""""""""""""""""""""""				4	5 H	85
1:1000       """"""""""""""""""""""""""""""""""""			E.F	8.9	12	4.9
1:10,000         "         "         Slight         "           B.para-         Undiluted         Good         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         "         " <td>~</td> <td></td> <td>17</td> <td>8-</td> <td>-</td> <td></td>	~		17	8-	-	
B.para- J.luted Good Good Good Cood typhosus 1:10 C 1:100 " " " " " " " 1:1000 " " " " " " " 1:1000 " Nil Clight " 1:100 " Nil Clight " 1:100 " Slight Slight " 1:100 " " " " " " B. Undiluted Good Good Good Good Good aertrycke 1:10 " " " " " 1:100 " " " " " " B. Undiluted Good Good Mil Good 1:10 " " " " " " B.shigae Undiluted Cood Good Mil Good 1:10 " " " " " " B.shigae Undiluted Cood Good Mil Good 1:10 " " " " " " B.shigae Undiluted Cood Good Mil Good 1:10 " " " " " " " B.shigae Undiluted Cood Good Mil Good 1:10 " " " " " " " B.shigae Undiluted Cood Good Mil Good 1:10 " " " " " " " B.shigae Undiluted Cood Good Mil Good 1:10 " " " " " " " B.shigae Undiluted Cood Good Mil Good 1:10 " " " " " " " " B.shigae Undiluted Cood Good Mil Good 1:10 " " " " " " " " " " " " " " " " " " "			**	*5	@14ht	* <b>a</b>
typhosus 1:10 C 1:100 C 1:100 1:1000 B.enteri- Undiluted Good Good Good Good Good 1:10 1:100 B. Undiluted Good Good Good Good 1:10.000 B. Undiluted Good Good Good Good 1:10.000 1:10.000 B.shigae Undiluted Ocod Good Mil Good 1:10.000 B.shigae Undiluted Ocod Good Mil Good 1:10.000 1:10.000 1:10.000 1:10 1:10.000 1:10 1:10.000 1:10 1:10.000 1:10 1:10.000 1:10 1:10.000 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10 1:10	72		Cool	dand		Good
C       1:100       """"""""""""""""""""""""""""""""""""						
1:1000         """"""""""""""""""""""""""""""""""""	typhosus				4 - <u>1</u>	Non-Seat
1:1000       "       Nil       Slight       "         B.enteri-       Undiluted       Good       Good       Good       Good       Good         1:100       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "         1:100       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "         1:100       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "         1:100       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "         1:100       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "<	C ·			- 18		1
B. enteri-       Undiluted       Cood       Good       Good       Good         B. enteri-       Undiluted       Cood       Good       Good       Good         1:100       "       "       "       "       "       "         1:100       "       "       "       "       "       "       "         1:100       "       Slight       Slight       "       "       "       "         1:10.000       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "         B.       Undiluted       Good       Good       Good       Mil       Good       Good         1:10.000       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "	1 P 1 P		- FI		H	
tidis       1:10       n       Slight       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       <		1:10000	et	Nil		94
1100       n       Slight       Slight       n         1:100       n       Slight       Slight       n         1:10,000       n       n       n       n         B.       Undiluted       Good       Good       Good       Good         aertrycke       1:10       n       n       n       n         1:100       n       Slight       Slight       n       n         1:100       n       Slight       Slight       n       n         1:10,000       n       n       n       n       n         1:10,000       n       n       n       n       n         1:10,000       n       n       Slight       n       n         1:100       n       n       Slight       n       n         1:1000       n       n       n       n       n         1:1000       n       n       n       n       n         1:100       n       n       n       n       n         1:100       n       n       n       n       n         1:100       n       n       n       n       n <td>B.enteri-</td> <td>Undiluted</td> <td>Cood</td> <td>Good</td> <td>aced</td> <td>Ocod</td>	B.enteri-	Undiluted	Cood	Good	aced	Ocod
1:100       n       Slight       Slight       n         1:10.000       n       n       n       n       n         B.       Undiluted       Good       Good       Good       Good       Good         aertrycke       1:10       n       n       n       n       n       n         1:100       n       n       n       n       n       n       n         1:100       n       Slight       Slight       n       n       n       n         1:1000       n       n       Nil       Slight       n       n       n         1:1000       n       n       Nil       Nil       n       n       n         1:1000       slight       n       n       Nil       n       n       n         1:1000       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n         1:1000       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n         1:1000       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n       n		1:10	- Pir	81	- 10	
1:10:00       """"""""""""""""""""""""""""""""""""			29	Slight	Slight	54
1:10.000       """"""""""""""""""""""""""""""""""""			PB	n	H	10
B.       Undiluted       Good			28	19	19	<b>C</b> 7
aertrycke       1:10       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       " <t< td=""><td>D</td><td></td><td>0000</td><td>Geod</td><td>0000</td><td>Bood</td></t<>	D		0000	Geod	0000	Bood
1:100       "       Slight       "         1:10,000       "       "       "         1:10,000       "       "       "         B.shigae       Undiluted       Oood       Good       Mil       Good         1:10       "       "       "       "       "       "         1:10       "       "       "       "       "       "         1:100       Slight       Nil       Mil       "       "       "         1:1000       Slight       Nil       Mil       "       "       "       "         1:10,000       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "         1:10,000       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "         1:1000       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "       "			H			
1:100     1:100     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:1000     1:10000     1:10000     1:10000     1:10000     1:10000     1:10000     1:10000     1:10000     1:10000     1:10000     1:10000     1:10000     1:10000     1:10000     1:10000     1:10000     1:10000     1:10000     1:10000     1:10000     1:10000     1:10000     1:10000     1:10000     1:10000     1:100000     1:100000     1:100000     1:100000     1:100000     1:100000	act.rt.Acre		State Parts	12 3 4	(11 +	
1:100     1:10,000     1:10,000     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10     1:10			+2	Elignt	Slight	
B.shigae       Undiluted       Good       Mil       Good         1:10       """"""""""""""""""""""""""""""""""""	N3 ) '			10	a constant	
1:10     """"""""""""""""""""""""""""""""""""			11	10	14	
1:10     """"""""""""""""""""""""""""""""""""	B.shigae	Undiluted				
1:100       Slight       Nil		1:10	19	59	Slight	<b>94</b>
1:1000     """"""""""""""""""""""""""""""""""""	ALL AND AND A	1:100	Slight	N11		4 <b>1</b>
1:10,000     """"""""""""""""""""""""""""""""""""						99
B.flexneri Undiluted Cood Good Good Good Good 1:10 " 6light 1:100 " Nil " 1:100 Nil Nil " B.sonnei Undiluted Good Slight Slight Cood 1:10 Nil " 1:100 Nil " 1:100 Nil " 1:100 Nil " 1:100 Nil "			58	42	11	98
1:10     "     Slight       1:100     Slight     Slight       1:100     "     "       1:1000     "     Nil       1:10.000     Nil     "       B.sonnei     Undiluted     Gcod       1:10     Nil     "       1:10     Nil     "       1:10     Nil     "       1:10     Nil     "	E Clevnent		('003	Good	1:00 8	Geod
1:100     Slight     Slight       1:100     "     "       1:1000     "     "       1:10.000     Nil     "       B.sonnei     Undiluted     Good       1:10     Nil     "       1:10     Nil     "       1:10     Nil     "	D.ITCYHELT					
1:1000         Nil         Nil           1:10.000         Nil         Nil         Nil           B.sonnei         Undiluted         Good         Slight         Slight         Cood           1:10         Nil         "         "         "         "         "           1:10         Nil         "         "         "         "         "           1:100         Nil         "         "         "         "         "         "	A			1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1	DITEUL	3-1
1:1000     Nil     Nil       1:10.000     Nil     Nil       B.sonnei     Undiluted     Good       1:10     Nil     "       1:10     Nil     "       1:10     Nil     Nil       1:100     Nil     Nil						2. ##
B.sonnei Undiluted Good Slight Slight Cood 1:10 Nil " 1:100 Nil " 1:100 Nil "	Q Q P 10 3 1		The second se		N11	
B.sonnei Undiluted Good Slight Slight Cood 1:10 Nil " 1:100 Nil Nil "		1:10.000	Nil	Nil	12	80
$\begin{array}{cccccccccccccccccccccccccccccccccccc$	B.sonnei		Good		Slight -	Cood
				11	11	
		1:100		N11	N11	20
		1:10001:1000	98. 71	- <del>57</del> . {1		.n

This was usually found to be 50 million or Selet? . 20-25 8. FRETTON IN ATOP. ALLO ACLD ON EXPERIMENTAL TICHOID of this period as a rule if recovered ranidly fowth of B. typhosus in vitro was so well-marked that it appeared worth while to determine whether a similar effect could be obtained in in Experiment 12, which was carried out vivo experimente. exactly as was experiment 11, with sulphapyridine added to the medium instead of p-aminobengoic soid, shows a reverse order of inhibition of the growth of the same organisms. Since this in vitro effect is duplicated by in vive experiments. sulphonamides having well marked therapeutic value in bacillary dysentery but very little action in typhoid fever, there seemed to be, by analogy, good prospects that large doses of p-aminobenzoic soid might influence typhoid fever. It was decided, therefore, to test its effects in experimentally produced typhoid infection in mice. Following the technique described by Lewin (1938), cultures of a virulent strain of B. typhosus \* were prepared and the minimum fatal cose determined by intraperitoneal injection into mice of This was usually found to be 50 million organisms 20-25 8. which killed in 24 to 36 hours. If the mouse survived this For injection, a period, as a rule it recovered rapidly. suspension of this number of organisms was made in a volume of 0.25 c.c. by dilution of a 24-hour nutrient broth culture The virulence of the strains with sterile normal saline. was confirmed by demonstrating the presence of high contents of Vi antigen - the strains applutinating Vi antisera to a titre of 1:800 or higher - and either the absence of

<sup>\*</sup> Made available by Dr. W.Lewin of the S.A.Institute of Medical Research who also very kindly arranged for the mouse injections.

Page 138.

0-antigen agglutination or agglutination only to low titres.

The level of the toxic dose of p-aminobenzoic acid for mice was first determined. Scott and Robbins (1942) observed that the median lethal dose in mice was 2.85 +0.4 g. per kg. body weight - approximately 50-65 mg. for a 20 g. mouse. When administered orally as the free acid they found that the toxic signs in mice produced by p-aminobenzoic acid consisted of weakness and lose of normal posture, death occurring after several hours. then lethal doses were administered intravenously as the sodium salt, p-aminobenzoic acid produced mild clonic convulsions with death in 5-10 minutes. It was found here that when 10 mg. doses of p-aminobenzoic acid were injected subcutaneously 2-hourly into mice weighing 20-25 g... toxic signs became apparent after 2-3 injections were given, and consisted of hyperexcitability of the muscles of the whole body accompanied by twitching, and followed within a short while by unsteadiness of the gait and finally by actual paralysis, particularly of the hind limbs. Then the dose injected was reduced to 5 mg. 2-hourly, no obvious toxicity was apparent. In the following experiments, therefore, this dosage was never exceeded.

The effect of p-aminobenzoic acid when injections were commenced immediately after injection of a lethal dose of B. typhosus was first determined. Since p-aminobenzoic acid is known to be excreted rapidly, the greater part certainly within an 8 hour-period (Ghap.III), injections were continued 2- to 4-hourly during the day and until midnight, commencing again the following morning 8 to 9 hours later, and continuing 2-hourly. In experiment 13 these results are reported.

## EFFECT OF P-AMINOBEN GIC ACID ON EXPERIMENTALLY -PRODUCED TYPHOID INFECTION IN MICE. Experiment 13.

Fifty millions B. typhosus injected intraperitoneally into mice after which animals were divided into two groups. The Test Group received 5 mg. p-aminobenzoic acid (0.25 c.c. of a 2,0 solution in 1,0 NaHCO3, pH +8; subcutaneously at inter-The Control Group received 0.25 c.c. of 1% vals shown. NaHCO3 only, at the same intervals. The first signs of illness observed were standing-up of fur, diminished activity and huddling-up. Observations continued for 72 hours. 

Test Group.

Mouse No.				Survival (in Feriod. hours)
1	1,3,7,16,19,22,26,30,38	-		(Survived 72 hours +)
2 34 567890 1123145 167890 222345 2245	<pre>3,7,16. 3,7,16,19,22. 2,4,6. 2,4,6,8,11. 2,4,6,8,11,13,21. 2,4,6,8,11,13,21. 2,4,6,8,10,12,14. 2,4,6,8,10,12,14. 2,4,6,8,10,12,14. 2,4,6,8,10,12,14,22. 2,4,6,8,10,12,14,22. 2,4,6,8,10,12,14,22. 2,4,6,8,10,12,14,22. 2,4,6,8,10,12,14,22. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10. 2,4,6,8,10</pre>	4444444	Recovered and	19 23 6 8 12 23 23 23 23 12 13 13 13 22 24 (Survived 72 hours) 8 10 10 10 10 10 10 18 18 18

Total	Incubation Feriod. 155 hours.	Page 140. Survival Period. 394 hours.
Number of mice (n)	24	23
Mean (x)	6.5 hours.	17.1 hours.
Range	4-17	6-41
Standard deviation $(\sigma)$	3.2	7.6
Standard error of the mean ( , ) n)	<b>Q.6</b> 5	1.6
x ± 2 ( 5/1 n)	5.2-7.8	13.9-20.3
3	ALLER AND ALLER	

Survivals - 2 out of 25 = 8%.

No.	Sodium bicarbonate injected at follow	ing inter-	Incubation Period	Survival Period
	vals (in hours) af tion with B. ty		(in hours)	(in hours)
12	1,3,7,16. 2,3,7,16,19,22,26,	30.	1 <b>7</b> 23	19 32
34	2,2,4,6,8,11,13,21 2,2,4,6,8,11,13,21 2,2,4,6,8,11,13,21	210 201 21		23
5	1 2,2,4,6,8,11,13,21	,23,25.	13	23 26 28
5 6 7 8	1,2,4,6,8,10,12,14 1,2,4,6,8,10,12,14	,22,24,26.	6 24	28
	$\frac{1}{2}$ ,2,4,6,8,10,12,14 28,30,32,34.	1,22,24,26,	survi	vered and ved 72 hours.
9 LO	1,2,4. 1,2,4,6,8.		4	6 10
L1 L2	$\frac{1}{2}$ ,2,4,6,8.	South States	6	10 18
13 14	$\frac{1}{2}$ ,2,4,6,8,10. $\frac{1}{2}$ ,2,4,6,8,10,18,20		6	18 22
15 16	$\frac{1}{2}$ ,2,4,6,8,10,18,20 $\frac{1}{2}$ ,2,4,6,8,10,18,20	).	18 22	22 26
17	28, 30, 32, 40, 42, 4	),22,24,26,	41	46
18	$\frac{1}{2}$ ,2,4,6,8,10,18,20 28,30,32,40,42,4	,22,24,26,	Survived 72 hours.	Survived 72 hours.
	Charles Auron An	Incubation		Survival Period.
otal	CE PARTIE	Period. 242 hours		357 hours.
lumber	of mice (n)	17		16
lean (	x)	14.2		22.3
lange	She want to	4-41		6-46
Standa	rd deviation ( $\sigma_i$	10.3		9.3
	rd error of the			0.7
	( ( <b>TN</b> ),	2.5		2.3
<u>+</u> 2	(0, Jn)	9.2-19.2		17.7-26.9
				1

Survivals 2 out of 18 = 11%.

Twenty-five mice were included in the test group and at the same time a control group of 18 mice were injected 2-hourly with a sodium bicarbonate solution. 8% of the test group and 11% of the control group survived. This difference is not statistically significant and indicates at best that treatment with p-aminobenzoic acid has no beneficial effect. Further analysis of the results show that such treatment may in fact be harmful -- although these results must be interpreted with caution as the groups tested are small. The mean period elapsing before signs of illness were first observed was  $6.5 \pm 0.65$  hours in the test group where 24 mice became ill and  $14.2 \pm 2.5$  hours in the control group where 17 mice became ill. The difference between these figures is statistically significant since the means differ by more than twice the standard error (as the calculation  $x \pm 2(\sigma/\sqrt{n})$ However when the same analysis is applied to the means shows / of the periods of survivals after infection in the 23 mice of the test group which died  $(17.1 \pm 1.6 \text{ hours})$  and in the 16 mice of the control group which died  $(22.3 \pm 2.3 \text{ hours})$ , the difference is not statistically significant although again

Fage 142.

Lefore accepting the obvious conclusion that appears to emerge from experiment 13, namely that the <u>in vivo</u> action of p-aminobenzoic acid in non-toxic doses does not parallel its <u>in vitro</u> effect on E. typhosus, the possibility of modifying factors requires consideration. Lewin (1938, noted that the dose of B. typhosus injected into mice had to be so overwhelming that the mouse would succumb in 24-35 hours, and that

the treated group fares more badly than does the control group.

periment 14.

if the mouse survived h8 hours it generally recovered. p-Aminobenzoic acid is rapidly excreted and may not, thereforg, be able to reach and maintain a sufficiently high level in the blood and tissue fluids soon enough to counteract the rapid multiplication and thus the rapidly increasing toxic effects of B. typhosus in the mouse. A second possibility also suggests itself. Whereas p-aminobenzoic acid in large concentrations may inhibit growth of B. typhosus, in smaller concentrations it may stimulate it. This fact would explain the adverse therspeutic effect of p-aminobenzoic acid and also indicates how it may actually be hermful.

Page 14\_

These possibilities were. therefore, tested experimentally by indecting two groups of mice for 2-3 days with large dozes of p-aminobenzoic acid so as to "saturate" their tissues as far as possible, and then infecting both groups with E. typhosus. Thereafter in one group the injections of p-aminobenzoic acid were continued 2-hourly, the other group serving as a control. The results are shown in experiment 14. Twenty-five mice were included in the test group and 15 mice in the control group. The mean period elapsing before signs of illness were observed in the test gr up where 22 mice became ill was 14.1 + 1.7 hours, whereas in the control group where only 7 mice became ill this was 16.3 ± 1.6 hours. Though this difference is not significant, and the numbers are too small for accurate statistical evaluation, the control group certainly appears to fare much better than the test group. The mean period of survival of those animals which died in the test group (26.4 + 2.3 hours, is not significantly different from that of the control group

#### Page 144. Experiment 14. EPFACT OF RELIMINARY INJECTIONS OF P-AMINO-THOUGH ON THE TREATMENT OF TYPECID IN-FECTIONS IN MICE.

5 mg. p-aminobenzoic acid (0.25 c.c. of a 24 solution in 13 NaHCO<sub>3</sub>) injected subcutaneously 2-hourly from 8.30 a.m. to 10.30 p.m. for 2 days and then until 2.30 p.m. on the 3rd day. All mice then injected at 4 p.m. with one lethal dose (50 millions) of B. typhosus intraperitoneally and, thereafter, divided into two groups - the test group continuing to receive p-aminobenzoic acid 2-hourly as shown and the control group receiving no further injections. The first signs of illness and the survival period of the mice in each group were then noted, the observations being continued for 72 hours.

Test Group.

Mouse	p-aminobenzoic acid injected	Incubatio:	n . Survival
Fo.	at following intervals (in	Period	Period
	hours, after infection with	(in hours	(in hours)
	E. typhosus.		
1	2,3,5,7,16,18,20,22,24,26,	17	31
	28,30.	1.2	
2	1, 3, 5, 7, 16, 18, 20, 22, 24, 26, 28,	-	Survived
	30,41,44,47,49.		72 hours.
3 4 5	1,2,4,6,8,19,21,23.	17	24
4	2,2,4,6,8,19,21,23,25,27,29.	17	30
5	1,2,4,6,8,19, 21,23,25,27,29,	17	41
	31,40.		
6	$\frac{1}{2}$ , 2, 4, 6, 8, 19, 21, 23, 25, 27, 29,		
	31,40,42,44.48.	6, rec	overed and surviv
			72 hours.
7	2,2,4,6,8.	6	18
7 8	1,2,4,6,8,19,21,23,25.	6	26
9	1,2,4,6,8,19,21,23,25,27,29.	-	Survived
-	31,40,42,44,48.		72 hours.
10	2,2,4,6.	4	7
11	1,2,4,6.	4	7
12	2,2,4,6.	47	18
13	1,2,4,6,17,19,21.	7	22
14	1,2,4,6,17,19,21.	7	22
15	1,2,4,6,17,19,21,23,25.	18	26
16	1,2,4,6.8,17,19,21,23,25,27,	18	41
	29,31,40.		and and
17	1,2,4,6,8,17,19,21,23,25,27,	26 but 1	recovered and sur-
-,	29,31,40,42,44,48.		vived 72 hours.
18	1,2,4,6,8,17,19,21,23,25,27,		Survived
	29,31,40,42,44,48.		72 hours.

Continued on next page.

Page 145.

Test Group (Continued)

Mouse No.	p-aminobenzoic acid injected at following intervals (in hours, after infection with B. typhosus.	Incubation Period (in hours)	Survival Period (in hours)
19 20 21 22	2,4,6,8,10,12. 2,4,6,8,10,12. 2,4,6,8,10,12. 2,4,6,8,10,12,22,24,26,28,	12 12 12 22	22 22 22 32
23	30. 2,4,6,8,10,12,22,24,26,28,	24	32
24	30. 2,4,6,8,10, <b>12,</b> 22,24,26,28,	24	36
25	30,32. 2,4,6,8,10,12,22,24,26,28, 30,32,36.	30	48
Standa mean I ± 2 Surviv	rd Deviation (G, 7.8         rd error of the (G/1 n, 1.7         (G/1 n) 10.7-1         als 5 out of 25 =	hours 7.5 20%.	
e A	na in construit de las services de Statistica de la <u>Balance</u>		
el.c. e	a linerninge wordlyrt in	ana) (minip) aon maranana	

Control Group.

.

5

Mouse No.	Incubation Perio	od (in hours,.	Survival	Pe	riod (in hrs)
1		In cash dame	Survived	72	hours
2	Slight illness a				
·		recovered, and		72	44
3456 7890				72	79
4 .	18		1.1	22	
5	-		37	72	
6	-			72	
6	6			6	
8	18		1 2 3	18	
9	18			18	
	10		14L - 5 20	72	- 1 - 1
	18		**	26 72	49
11 12 13 14 15			11	72	11
	18		a substance	41	1
5	10		н	72	19
	1 August				Incl.
		Period.			<u>ival</u> od.
otal		114 hou	irs	132	hours.
	of mice (n)	7		6	4.0
iean (:		16.3 1	nours	22	hours.
Range	- 1	6-18	hours	- 7	41 hours.
Standa	rd Deviation (J)	4.1		10.	.3
	rd error		1 10 C	01.8	
	he mean (o, in)	1.6			2
* 2	(J n)	13.1-1	19.5	13.	6-30.4
		1	, 41-		
ទា	urvivals 9 out	of $15 = 60$	0.		
tan da.	a company of the	d ffanan an hatra	. the cho		+
ontom	rd error of the d	the test and any	the cho abt	2 V C	eac har-
entage	es of survival in	the test and con	nror grou	ibe	
	1.00	n - 1200 - n			
Δ.	X(100 - A) -	$B \times EIOO - HI$	3 5 6		
A	$\frac{\mathbf{x}(100 - \mathbf{A})}{\mathbf{N}_{+}} +$	$\frac{B \times (100 - B)}{N_{0}}$	= 15.0		
<u>A</u>	$\frac{\mathbf{x}(100 - \mathbf{A})}{\mathbf{N}_{t}} +$	<u>B x (100 - B)</u> N <sub>c</sub>			

Where	A		Fercent	tag	e sur	viya		test group.
	B	=		•	Carlo Ma	18	11	control group
	Nt	=	Number	of	mice	in		
	Nc	-	11	Ħ			cont	rol group.

 $(22 \pm 4.2 \text{ hours})$ , but here again 20 mice died in the test group as compared to only 6 in the control group.

Bince the difference (=40%) between the percentage survivals in the control and test groups is more than twice its standard error (= 15), it is statistically significant despite the relatively small number of mice in the two groups. Campbell (1941) has calculated that if this difference is 2.5 times its standard error the odds are 1 to 80, and if it is 3 times, they are 1 to 369 that a difference as large as this could occur simply by chance.

The significantly greater number of survivals in the control group as compared to the test group of experiment 14 indicates that p-sminobenzoic acid in some way increases the resistance of mice to infection when it is administered for some time before the animals are infected with B. ty-When, however, the administration is continued phosus. after infection, the beneficial effect is lost and such treated mice with 20% survivors are not significantly different from mice which are not treated at all. Such untreated mice show a survival rate of 14% (Experiments 13 and 15; Control Groups /; the difference between the percentage survivals in the two groups (6.5) is even less than its standard error (9.4), and, therefore, is certainly not signi-It is suggested that these findings can only mean ficant. that p-aminobenzoic acid cannot attain in vivo bacteriostayic concentrations, and that the concentrations that can be reached have a beneficial effect both on the animal organism and the infecting bacillus. Shen p-aminobenzoic acid is presented to the tissue cells of the mouse (before

infection with B. typhoaus; it increases the mouse's resistance to infection, but when infection has already occurred, this effect is completely overshadowed by the much greater stimulating effect of the concentration of p-aminobensoic acid reached in the blood on the growth of the infecting organism with whose metabolism it has a far more intimate relationship (Chapter 1,.

Before attempting to elucidate the nature of the "resistance" built up in the mouse by p-aminobenzoic acid, it was necessary to confirm on larger numbers that preliminary injections of p-aminobenzoic acid do in fact increase the number of survivors, when mice are injected with a lethal dose of B. typhosus. This confirmation is provided by experiment 15, and that a similar beneficial effect can be obtained by oral administration of p-aminobenzoic acid is shown in experiment 16.

26

#### Experiment 15. EFFECT OF INJECTIONS OF F-AMINOBENZOIC ACID ON COBSEQUENTLY INDUCED TYPHOID IN FROTION IN LICE.

5 mg. p-aminobensoic acid (0.25 c.c. of a 2% solution in 1% NaHCO3) was injected subcutaneously at 2-hourly intervale from 8.3 a.m. to 10.30 p.m. for 2 days and then until 10.30 a.m. on the 3rd day, into a test group of 35 mice. A control group of 32 mice was injected at the same time with 0.25 c.c. 1% MaHCO3. All mice were "then" infected introperitoneally with one lethal dose of 50 millions B. typhcsus. The first signs of illness and the observations being continued for 72 hours. Test Group.

llouse No.	Incubation	reriod	(In 1	ars,.	Survival	reriod	(in	hre,
	-11 46	0	1.2	58	5 A	20		
Ţ		8				12		
1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9		10				12		
3		10				22		
4		12				22		
5		12				22		
6		12				22		
7		12				22		
8		22				22		
9		22				24		
10		22				24		
11		22				24		
12		22				24		
13		22				24		
13 14		22				24		
15		22				24		
15 16		22				25		
17		22				26 26		
18		22				26		
19		22				29		
20		22				29		
21						Survive	d 72	hours
22		-				23	19	18
23						14	11	事項
24						10	58	12
25						**		14
25 26		_				58	78	89
27		_				**	**	#3
28		-				72		38

Continued on next page.

# Test Group(Continued,

Mouse No.	Incubation Feri	od (in hrs,.	Survival Feriod (in hrs).
29	4		Survived 72 hours.
30 31 32 33 34 35	· · · ·		" 72 "
31		U	" 72 "
32		1.1.1	" 72 "
33			11 72 H
34			" 72 "
35			M 72 H
Total Number o	f mice (n)	362 hours 20	20
Mean (x) Range Standard Standard	Deviation (J) error of the	18.1 hou 8-22 5.4	irs 23.0 hours. 12-29 4.2
Mean (x) Range Standard	error of the $\sigma/\sqrt{n}$	8-22	12-29 4.2 0.94

.Page 151.

Mouse	Incubation (in hou		Surviva (in 1		ieriod
No. 1		13,.	······	100	UE / 4
	56			10	
4	0				
2	0			11	
4	6			11	
2	10			12	
6	10			12	
2 3 4 5 6 7 8	10			21	
8	10			21	
9	12			21	
10	12			21	
11	12			21	
12	12			21	
13	12			21	
14	12			21	
15	12			21	
16	12			21	
17	19			21	
18	19			21	
19	19			21	
20	19			21	
21	19			21	
22	19			21	
23	19			21	
24	19			21	
25	22			24	
25 26	24			48	
27	24			48	
28	survived 72	hours	survived	72	hours
29	" 72	n	N	72	N
30	* 72	17	97	72	
31	" 72	14		72	**
32	<u> </u>	19	10	72	
	Incu	bation_Peri	od. Surv	iva	1 Perio
Total		381 hours			+ hours.
Number of r	nice (n	27		27	
lean (x)		14.1			.9
Range	(w)	5-24			)-48
	eviation (of	5.6			3.7
	ror of the	2.0		C	
mean $(\sigma/$		1.1		÷.,	7
$t + 2(\sigma/\sqrt{n})$		11.9-16	z		l.7 7.5-24.3

Survivals 5 out of 32 = 16%.

Standard error of the difference between the survival per-centages of test and control groups = 10.6

-- 5

#### Experiment 16. EPFECT OF ORAL ADMINISTRATION OF P-AMIMOBENZOIC ACID ON EUBERQUENTLY INDUCED TYPHOIL INPECTION IN MICE.

Approximately 50 mg. of p-aminobenzoic acid was fed daily to each of a test group of 40 mice by adding 1 part to 100 parts of their food. The average quantity of food consumed per mouse was first determined and found to be  $\pm$  5 g. After 2 weeks these mice plus a control group of 40 mice, kept on the same dist without p-aminobenzoic acid and under the same conditions for the same time, were infected intraperitoneally with 1 lethal dose, i.e. 50 millions of B. typhosus.

#### Test Group.

No.	Uncubation Period (in hours).	Survival Period (in hours)				
1	8	12				
2	10	12				
3	10	18				
J.	ĨĞ	18				
5	ĩč	18				
ĥ	12	18				
7	12	18				
8	12	-18				
0	18	18				
1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 10	10	10				
70 10	18 18	18				
11	10	18 18				
12	18	10				
13	18	13				
14	18	18				
15 16 17	18 18	18 18				
16	18	18				
1/	18	18				
18	18	22				
19	18	22				
20	18	22				
21	20	22 22				
19 20 21 22 23 24 25 26	18 20 20	24				
23	20	24				
24	20	24				
25	24	26				
26	24 26	23				
27	30	36				
27 28 29 30	-	24 26 29 35 survived 72 hours				
20		BULATACH IN HOULD				
RA.	-	<u>9</u> 4				
	-					

Later of the Philippe Deck

Test Group (Continued).

Mouse No.		hours).	Survival Period (in hours).
31 32 33 34 35 36 37 38 37 38 39 40			Survived 72 hours
_	1	Incubation Peric	d. <u>Survival Period</u> .
Totals	ton (n)	460 hours	544 hours.

0.00
rs
urs.
0

Survivals 13 out of 40 = 33%.

a

Control Group.

No.	Incubation Period. (in hours)	Survival Period (in hours)	
1	4	8	
2	8	10	
3 1	8	12	
	8	12	
4 5 6	8	12	
6	8	12	
7	8 8 8 12	18	
8	12	18	
9	12	28	
0	12	18	
1	12	18	
.2	12	18	
3	12	18	
4	12	18	
5	12	18	
.6	12	18	
.7	18	18	
8	18	18	
.9	18	18	
0	18	18	
		Continued on next page.	

Control Group (Continued)

$ \begin{array}{cccccccccccccccccccccccccccccccccccc$	18 18 18 18 18 18 18 18 18 18	18 18 18 18 18 18 18 18 18 18 18 18 18 1	
40	22	24 26 Survived 72 hours.	
Inc Totals Number of mice (n) Mean (x) Range tandard deviation ( $\sigma$ ) Standard error of the mean ( $\sigma/\sqrt{n}$ ) x + 2( $\sigma/\sqrt{n}$ )	I           subation Period           510 hours           35           14.6 hours           4-30 hours           4.2           0.71           13.2-16.0	614 hou 35 17.5 h	urs. hours. hours

Standard error of the difference between the survival percentages of test and control groups = 9.6.

Page 195.

Experiment 15 shows that in the test group of 35 mice 20 or 57% became ill and died, the mean period before onset of symptoms in the mice being  $18.1 \pm 1.2$  hours and the survival period after infection with B. typhosus  $23.0 \pm 0.94$ hours. In the control group of 32 mice, 27 or 84% became ill and died, the mean period before onset of symptoms here being  $14.1 \pm 1.1$  hours and the survival period  $20.9 \pm 1.7$ hours. Although the difference between the incubation periods and the survival periods in the two groups is not statistically significant, again the test group appears to fare better. Moreover, the difference (27%) between the survival percentages of the test and control groups is significant, being more than twice its standard error (16.6,.

Experiment 16 confirms these findings when p-aminobenzoic acid is administered orally (ingested with the food) for a period of two weeks. In the test group here of 40 mice, 27 or 67% became ill and died, the signs of illness being noted after a mean period of  $17.0 \pm 1.0$  hours and death occurring after a mean period of  $20.1 \pm 0.94$  hours. The corresponding figures for the control group of 40 mice in which 35 or 87% became ill and died were  $14.6 \pm 0.71$  hours and  $17.5 \pm 0.66$  hours. Again the test group appears to have benefited from the preliminary treatment with p-aminobenzoic acid, and the difference (20%, between the survival percentages of the test and control groups is significant, the standard error being 9.6.

The results of experiments 14, 15 and 16 are summarised in the following table. The difference between the survival

Page 156.

percentages of all the mice treated with p-aminobenzoic acid before infection with B. typhosus, and that of mice either untreated or treated after infection is 4 times the standard error between these percentages which is double the minimum requirement (of twice the standard error.) for significance.

From these experiments it is concluded that quantities of p-aminobenzoic acid far in excess of those produced under physiological conditions have on the mouse beneficial effects similar to its effects in bacteria.

To-	16	15		F	Experiment Number.	
90	40	35	p-ami	15	No. of mice in group.	Pre p-ami not c
	27	20	limi nobe tic	7	No. of mice show- ing illness.	no be no be with
、	17.0 ±1.0	18.1	ary tr zoic a with	16.3	Incubation period. (in hours)	ty a ty
	27	20		6	No. of mice dying.	E TR
	20.1	23.0	nt wii efore phonus	1+ 22.	Survival period (in hours).	nt with
37	13	15	infe	9	No. of survivors.	h (but
41.1	33	43	0	60	vivors.	-
97	40	22	No p Bmin	25	No. of mice in group.	treatment tion with
	CH CH	27	prelia nobena tion	NN	No. of mice show- ing illness.	n with
	14.6	14.1 14.1	ary c a	14.1 ±1.7	Incubation period (in hours).	B. B.
	35	27	cid b B. ty	NO	No. of mice dying.	-aminob tinued typhosu
	17.5	20.9	1000	1+26	Survival period (in hours,.	benzoi after us.
ডা	UT	5	· inf	J	No. of eurvivors.	50
15.5	13	16	<b>d o</b> 1 0 1 0	20	fercentage of sur- vivors.	acid nfec-
6.4	9.6	10.6		15.0	Standard error of difference between survival percentag the two groups.	the
statistically	Statistically Bignificant.	Statistically		Statistically Bignificant.	Significance of th ference between su percentages of the groups.	rvival

#### Fage 158.

#### EPFECT OF P-AMINCBENZOIC ACID ON EXPERIMENTAL TUBERCULOSIS IN QUINEA-PICE.

In the previous section experimental evidence that p-aminobenzoic acid increases the resistance of mice to infection with typhoid bacilli has been detailed. Since, however, B. typhosus causes in mice a rapidly fatal septicaemia, it was felt that a more chronic disease might provide confirmatory and clearer evidence of this beneficial effect of p-aminobenzoic acid. Tuberculous infection in guinea-pigs was selected for study, since it is generally accepted that B. tuberculosis produces a progressive disease in the guinea-pig with no evidence of any naturally-occurring immunity. Any observable effect of the progress of the disease is, therefore, more likely to be significant.

Two groups of five guinea-pigs were inoculated with 200 millions B. tuberculosis which is about one-fifth the dose required to kill a guinea-pig in 6 weeks. One group was then treated with p-aminobenzoic acid by its addition to the diet, the other group serving as a control. Weights and restal temperatures were recorded daily and autopsies performed on each animal as soon as possible after death. At the same time, the weights of two other non infected groups of five guinea-pigs kept under the same conditions as the two preceding groups, one with p-aminobenzoic acid in its diet and the other without, were also recorded. The results are summarized in the table and graphs of experiment 17.

#### Experiment 17. <u>BPFECT OF P-ANINOBENZOIC ACID ON TUB ROULOSIS</u> IN CUINEA-PICS.

Twenty guinea-pigs, 300-350 g. in weight, were divided into 4 groups, each containing 5 animals. All 4 groups were fed on a bran and oats diet of which they consumed about 25-30 g. daily, plus daily offerings of lettuce leaves. At the outset of the experiment, Groups A and B were inoculated intramuscularly with 200 millions B. tuberculosis from a 14-day culture on Petragnani's and Loewenstein's media. This dose was approximately 1/5 the dose estimated to kill a 300-350 g. guinea-pig in 6 weeks. Groups A and C had 0.4% p-aminobenzoic acid added to their diet so that each guinea-pig in these groups would receive 100-120 mg. p-sminobenzoic acid daily. All animals were weighed daily and their rectal temperatures taken. The rectal temperatures are not detailed since none of the animals showed marked pyrexia nor could the degree of pyrexia be correlated with the apparent progress of the disease.

In Table I, the weekly maximum weights of all the guinea-pigs in the four groups are recorded.

In Table II the weekly maximum rectal temperature of the animals in Groups A and B are recorded. Daily rectal temperatures were not recorded in Groups C and D but the normal rectal temperature of the guinea-pigs was found to be between  $100.5^{\circ}$  F. and  $102.5^{\circ}$ F.

In Table III the period of surviyal and autopsy findinge of all the guinea-pige in Groups A and B are recorded.

<u>In Graph I</u>, the percentage increase in weights of infected animals treated with p-aminobenzoic acid (Group A) are compared with non-infected animals under the same conditions (Croup C).

In Graph II the percentage increase in weights of infected untreated animals (Group B) are compared with noninfected animals under the same conditions (Group D).

	a De
1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1	Week
1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1	1+50 70 7
1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1	
1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1	7th W
1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1	o de la calenda de
1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1	oth 4
475 435 395 455 455 455 455 455 455 455 355 450 457 355 450 280 417 355 450 280 417 355 400 280 417 355 400 280 417 355 400 280 417 355 400 280 417 355 400 280 417 355 400 280 417 355 400 280 417 355 400 280 417 355 400 280 417 355 400 280 417 355 400 280 417 355 400 280 417 355 355 400 280 417 355 355 400 280 417 355 355 400 280 417 355 355 400 280 417 355 355 400 280 417 355 355 400 280 417 355 355 400 280 417 355 355 400 417 355 355 400 417 355 355 400 280 417 355 355 400 280 417 355 355 400 280 417 355 355 400 280 417 355 355 400 280 417 355 355 400 280 417 355 355 400 280 417 355 355 400 280 417 355 355 400 280 417 355 355 400 280 417 355 355 400 280 417 355 355 400 280 417 417 417 417 417 417 417 417 417 417	
1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1       1	
435 395 400 440 380 385 435 395 440 1 355 400 440 355 400 285 435 325 34 1 355 400 285 1450 325 34 1 355 400 285 1450 325 34 1 1 355 395 1465 355 42 1 1 355 395 1465 355 42 1 1 355 395 1465 355 42 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1	a a
1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1	
380 385 435 325 34 - 355 400 280 - 355 400 280 - 355 400 280 - 355 30 - 1 355 400 - 1 - 355 400 - 1 - 355 11ed - 1	7th "
	00 古 古
	21st #
- 355 330 - 330 Flood	
* - 330 - Med	3rd "
- M	4th "
	5th W

Page 161.

1

TABLE II. CERTLY RAGINUM RECTAL TEMPERATUR S IN DECREES PARAENTEIT OF GUINEA-PIGS IN GROUPS A AND B.

		1	Ga	oup A.				Gi	roup B.		
		1	2	3	4	5	1	2	3	4	5
Cours	ence-	100.8	101.8	101.4	102.2	101.4	100.6	101.2	101.4	101.6	101.0
ment											
ment											
1st	week		1.2.4			101.6		101.6			
2nd	8.6	112.8			102.8	102.8	103.2			103.4	
3rd		102.2	102.8	103	103.4	1.2.6	103.4	103.8		1(2.6	
4th	中華			103	103	102.6	103.4	102.8			102.8
5th	c.	102.2	102.6	1.2.4		103.2	103.6	102.2	103.2	1.2.8	102.6
6th	61	102.2	102.2	162.4	102.8	102.8	102.6	102.8	102.8	102.8	102.4
7th	23	102.4	102.0	102.6	1.2.8	103	112.8	102.6	1.3.2		102.4
8th	59	102.2	102.2	101.6	102.8	102	Died	102.2	103	102.6	102.6
9th	<b>\$</b> 2	102 \	1(2.4	101.8	102.8	102.6	-	102.4	103	102.6	102.6
Oth	9¥	102	102.6	103	103.4	102.4	-178	102.8	103.6	1(2.4	102.6
lth	55	102.4	102.6	102.8	103	102.2	***	102.8	103	102.6	102.8
2th	79	102.4	102.8	102.2	1.2.6	102.6		102.6	1(3	102.6	102.6
3th	19	1(2.2	163	1(2.2	103	102.4		102	103.4	103.2	103.2
4th	141	102.8	113.6	101.8	102.6	102.4		102.6	103	103	103.8
5th	**	103	103.8	102.8	103.2	103.4		.Dieđ	102.4	103	103.1
6th	-	103.5	103.6	103.4	102.4	103			102.4	103	103.2
7th	<b>r</b> 1	103	103.8	112.6	102.6	102.6				102.4	
Sth	68	101.8	103.4	102.6	103.4	101.4			163.2		102.8
9th		Died	103.2		102.6	Died			103.4		Died
Oth	28				102.2		-	-	102.4	-	-
let	11	-	102.2	101	Died	-		-	102.2		-
2nd	<b>51</b>	-		101.6	-	-		_	102.4	-	-
3rd	et	-	101.8	101.2		-	-		102.2	-	
4th	**	-	102.2		1 <b>-</b>	-	-	-	101.4	-	-
			Died						Died		

Pag 16			AUTOPSY FINDINGS		
roup A.	1.	2.	3.	4.	5
0 3 9 4	122 days	165 daya.	154 days	136 days	121 days
ite of njec- ions in eft high.	Small area of caseation;tuberde bacilli present in smear from caseous material.	Very small area of caseation; tubercle bacilli present in smear.	Very small area of caseation; tubercle bacilli present in smear from caseous material.	Small area of caseation;tuber cle bacilli pre- sent in smear.	Small area of caseation; tubercle bac- illi not detec- ted in smear.
yaph land in eft roin.	Enterged and slightly cased s; tubercle bacilli present in smear.	Slightly enlar- ged; no casea- tion. tubercle bacilli present in smear.	Hyperaemic, en- larged, but not caseous; tuber- cle bacilli present in smear.	Nyperaemic, en- larged, but not caseous; tuber- cle bacilli not detected IN swear.	Inlarged but not casecus; tubergle badil1 not detected in smear.
ymph land land ight roin.	Enlarged, hyper- aemic but not caseous; tubercle bacilli not detected in smear.	Clightly en- larged; no caseation. Tubercle bacHli present in smear.	Normal; tubercle bacilli not de- tected in smear.	Snlarged; no caseation; tubercle badili not detected in smear.	Anlarged; no caseation; tubercle bac- illi not de- tected in
iver	Orossly enlar- ged and stud- ded with mili- ary tubercles; tubercle badili not detected in smear.	Slightly enlar- ged; studded with fine miliary tubercles; Tubercle bacili present in smear.	Slightly enlar- ged and studded with fine mili- ary tubercles; tubercle bed li present in smear.	Enlarged; sever al tubercles scattered throughout; tubercle badil1 not detected in smear.	Enlarged and studded with miliary nodules tubercle backlin not detected in smear.
pleen.	Enlarged;with several coase nodules present; tubercle bacilli not detected in smear.	Groesly enlar- aed with large greas of mecro- fis; tubercle bacilli pre- gent in gmear.	Enlarged and atudded with hodules; tubercle bao- llli not de- tected in smear.	Enlarged with a few scattered tubercles; tubercle bac- illi not detec- ted in smear.	Enlarged with several scat- tered nodules; tubercle badili not detected.

÷.

		TAL MAL		
			ましていい ちゅうちょう ほうまく	
			2-2-2	
		C -	ションション	
I'L TOL	11 :	0	GITT	

Page 164.

> NO OF SURVIVAL AND AUTOPSY FINDINGS OF CUINEA-FIGS IN GROUPS A AND B.

AUTOPSY FINDINGS.

	Para- aortic lumph glands.	peri- toneal cavity.	Group A.
Several fine tubercles scat- tered through- out both lungs; tubercle bac- illi present in smear.	Enlarged but not caseous.	No exudate.	1.
Scattered no- dules through- out both lungs; tubercle bac- illi <u>present</u> in smear.	Enlarged.	Elord-stained exudate.	2.
A few nodules in both lungs; tubercle bac- illi present in smear.	Not enlarged.	<b>CD</b>	3.
A few nodules in both lungs, but tubercle bacilli not cetected in smear.	Not enlarged.	No exudate.	
A few nodules in both lungs; tubercle bacilli <u>present</u> in smear.	Enlarged and hyperacaic.	Clear, straw- coloured exudate.	5.

Mean survival time after infection = 139.6 days.

13

Pag 16		AUTOPSY	FINDINGS.		+
Oroup B.	1.	N	3.	4.	5.
Survival	LL6 days	95 days	150 days	117 days	124 days
الحمل يعسون			1.0.42	A	
Site of	Large	122	Small caseous		
injection	area in m	areas in muscle	5 m	tion of muscle;	2 1
thigh.	present in	present in	In	present in snear .	1111 present
	120.0110	Duite			
Lymph	inlarged and		Enlarged and	and and	Enlarged and
in left	casecus [uuer-	cassous; cuour-	tubercle bac-	cle bacilli	cle bacilli
Groin.	present in	sent	1111 not de-	present in	present in
	smear.	Sme ar		smear.	sneer.
I.ymph	Enlarged and	mlarged and	Snlarged and	Enlerged and	Enlarged and
gland	hypersento;	- المراج	5000	- 1	hyperaemic;
	tubercle bac-	rele bac-	00		
eroin.	tected in	ted in smear.	tected in	tected in	tected in
	sucar.		Smear.	smear.	snear.
	- Ce i	sly entar-	2.48	5.51	
Liver	larged and	ged and studded	studded with	100	and
	At Did and the second	and the sum			Autorosian
		tubercle bacili	cle bacilli	tubercle bacili	cle bacilli
		1.2	dete	part.	
	detected in	in smear.	in smear.	snear.	in smear.
Spleen	Snlarged and	Grossly enlar-	Splarced with	Very grossly	Gross venlar-
	-		63	enlarged and	
	willary tuber-	nun		studded with	with
		coarse nodules;	bacilli not	nodules;	ous nodules;
	bacilli not	rele bac-	0		rele
	Cocces An		Cucar.	THOSE TTTT	ted in smean

and the second s

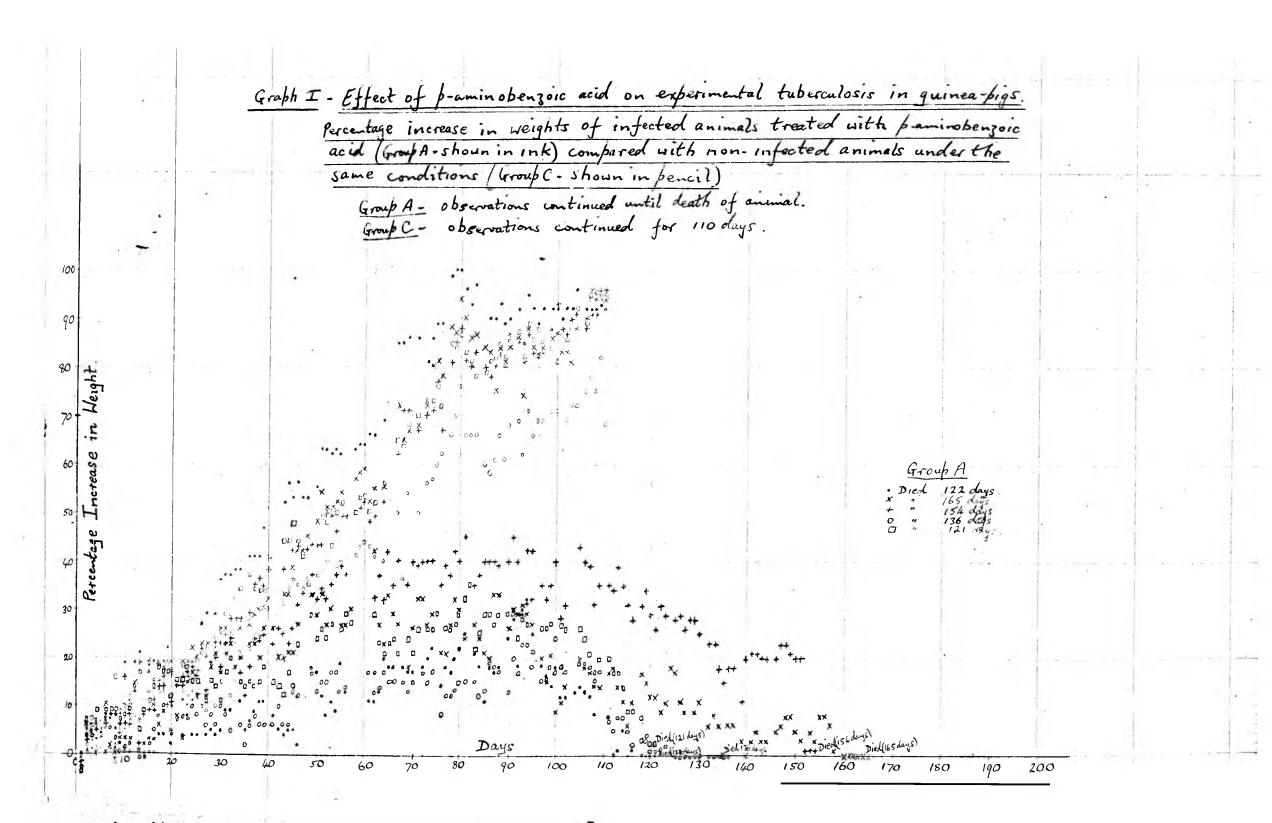
Group B.	1.	2.	ų	÷	5.
Periton- eal civ- ity.	Excess of blood- stained exudate present;tubercle bacilli not de- tected in smear.	No exudate.	No exudate.	Excees of blood- stained exudate; tubercle bacilli not detected in smear.	No exudate.
Para- aortic lymph glands.	1		Not enlarged	Enlarged and caseous.	Enlarged and caseous.
Lungs.	Numerous tuber- cles scattered throughout both lungs;tubercle bacilli not de- tected in smear.	Several tuber- cles scattered throughout both lungs; tubercle bac- illi present in smear.	Numerous tuber- clee scattered through both lungs. Numerous tuber- cle bacilli present in	Numerous tuber- cles scattered throughout both lungs;tubercle bacilli present in smear.	Congested with petechial haemorrhages; tubercle bac- illi not de- tected in

TABLE III CONTINUED.

Mean survival time after infection = 108.4 days.

•

.



guines-pig, it does produce some resistance in this animal

It will be seen that treatment of tuberculotic guineapigs with p-aminobenzoic acid while not preventing development of the infection prolongs their period of survival (from 108.4 to 139.6 days) and diminishes the severity of the disease since the treated group as a whole shows a greater increase in weight than does the untreated group, although this increase falls considerably short of that of normal guines-pigs under the same conditions. The data recorded for the two non-tuberculous control groups also indicate that p-aminobenzoic acid per se added to the diet is not responsible for this increase since the weight changes of these two groups are on the whole similar. Nevertheless, at autopsy the recorded findings do not show any significant difference between the treated and untreated groups although the impression was gained that the untreated guinea-pigs showed a greater number of lesions and a more widespread involvement of organs than did the treated guinea-pigs, and this despite the fact that the longer survival period in the treated groups should if anything have permitted more extensive lesions to develop.

Jace 167.

On the whole, therefore, the conclusion appears permissible that whereas p-aminobenzoic acid in large doses has no bacteriostatic action on B. tuberculosis in the guinea-pig, it does produce some resistance in this animal after it has been experimentally infected with tuberculosis. These results confirm the previous findings that p-aminobenzoic acid in mice increases their resistance to infection with typhoid bacilli.

Page 168.

The two most probable interpretations of the effect of p-aminobenzoic acid when added to the diet or injected subcutaneously which suggest themselves are:-

- (a) the effect may be due to an alteration in the defense mechanism of the host,
- (b) the effect may be due to an interference in the in vivo cultural medium of the parasite.
- (a) necessitates (i) a study of the development of antibodies and their circulation in the blocd stream during administration of p-aminobenzoic acid and
  - (11) a study of any stimulating effects of p-aminobenzoic acid on the phagocytic activity of the reticuloendothelial system.

The possibility of (b, appears to be ruled out by the observation (p.147; that this effect of p-aminobenzoic acid is not seen when its exhibition is continued after infection with B. typhosus. A study, therefore, of antibody formation and reticulo-endothelial activity during feeding with p-aminobenzoic acid was made.

# ACTIVITY OF THE RETICULO-ENTOTHELIAL SYSTEM.

Yeomans, Snyder, Murray, Zarafonetis and Ecke (1944) investigated the possible therapeutic effect of p-amino benzoic acid in louse-borne typhus fever in man following a report by Snyder, Maier and Anderson (1942) that the mortality of experimental murine typhus in white mice was reduced by the oral administration of the drug. The latter workers found that large amounts of p-aminobenzoic acid were required to demonstrate such an action, which even occurred, though to a lesser extent, when the oral administration was started one or two days after the inoculation of rickettsias. Yeomans and his co-workers confirmed this effect in human louse-borne typhus fever and concluded that when treatment was started in the first week of illness, the clinical course of the patients who received p-aminobenzoic acid was much less severe than that of patients not so treated.

Eince the multiplication of rickettsias occurs in the cells of the reticulo-endothelial system, the suggestion was put forward by these workers that p-aminobenzoic acid exerts its effect by stimulating in some way the cells of this system (p.6). In the previous section this possibility was independently suggested by the results obtained when studying the effects of p-aminobenzoic acid on experimental typhoid infection in mice and experimental tuberculosis in guinea-pigs. It was, therefore, decided to test the effect of p-aminobenzoic acid on the activity of the reticulo-endothelial system.

÷.

- Mar - Loridel Kar an

As is well-known, such a study is fraught with great practical difficulties. After a consideration of various techniques discussed by Maher (1944,, including the use of thorotrast, which is a stabilised emulsion of thorium dioxide containing 25% by volume, and 19-20% by weight, of thorium dioxide, with from 16-19% of protective colloid, it was decided to use thorium dioxide suspensions and study both by successive A-ray picits deposition in the spleen, tures and by histological examination. After intravenous

Page 169.

injection, thorotrast is deposited in the spleen and liver. and when sufficient has been injected to "block" the reticuloendothelial system, storage in the spleen appears to be complete within three hours after injection, as observed by . X-rays. Further, during the following 72 hours there is no significant shift of the stored material. Since thorotrast was unfortunately not procurable here, various aqueous suspensions of thorium dioxide were prepared by grinding the powder in a morter, and stabilised by the addition of gum acacia. Since 25% auspensions of thorium dioxide were found to be too thick for injection into the femoral vein of the rat, 10% suspensions were finally used.

Fage 170.

After being fed for 2 weeks on a diet containing 1% p-aminobenzoic acid, a group of 10 rats was injected with 10% thorium dioxide suspension. 7 rats receiving 0.25 ml.. and 3 rats 0.5 ml. At the same time a control group of 10 rats kept under the same conditions as the first group but without p-aminobenzoic acid addition to their diet. were injected with the thorium dioxide suspension in the same proportions. All injections were made into the femoral vein after anaesthetisation of the rat. Larger volumes were not injected since in trial experiments such quentities of the suspension of therium dioxide were found to produce toxic effects which usually ended fatally. TWO hours after injection all the animals were X-rayed **x** and the plates examined for a concentration of the radio-opaque thorium in the splenic area. Further X-ray plates were taken after 24 hours and again after 48 hours.

The results in all cases were quite negative, neither # See nage 171.

#### Page 171.

the test nor the control groups showing sufficient absorption of the thorium by the reticulo-endothelial cells of the spleen to be demonstrable radiologically.

Since the possibility existed that insufficient thorium had been injected for radiological examination, all the animals were killed after 48 hours and the spleens removed for sectioning. X The sections were stained with haematoxylin and eosin and examined microscopically by dark-ground The cosin-strined cells under the darkillumination. ground illumination provided a greenish. almost fluorescent background, against which the highly-refractile, violetcoloured particles of thorium dioxide could easily be observed. Although in all the spleens examined, the amount of thorium dioxide phagocytosed by the reticulo-endothelial cells was considerable, it was approximately the same in testing and a state of the both test and control groups.

The only conclusion, therefore, which these observations permit is that p-aminobenzoic acid, as judged by the techniques used, has no effect on the activity of the reticulo-endothelial system. It must be conceded, however, that the relative crudeness of the methods available for investigating the functioning of the reticulo-endothelial system precludes any really accurate assessment of this problem.

The radiological investigation was carried out in the Radiology 1 epartment of the Johannesburg General Hospital, and the sections of the spleens prepared by the Histology Department, University of the Witwatersrand. To both these departments I wish to express my sincere thanks for invaluable assistance.

### Page 172.

Photographs of the X-ray plates and photomicrographs of the splenic sections have not been prepared since no differences were observed between the test and control groups.

- \* . March 1 - 5 .

## IPFECT OF P-AMINOBENZCIC ACID ON THE DEVELOPMENT OF ANTIBODIES.

the mat had to do white the product of an an at here a

It is generally accepted that the reticulo-endothelial system is concerned with humoral immunity no less than with cellular immunity. Recently studies indicating that the lymphocyte elaborates antibodies have also appeared.

With the hope of elucidating the mechanism by which p-aminobenzoic acid increased the resistance of animals to infection, its effect on antibody formation was investigated. This was done by following the development of circulating antibodies after injection of dead typhoid bacilli into two groups of rabbits, one of which was being treated with p-aminobenzoic acid orally, the other group serving as a control. At the same time, total and differential leucocyte counts were done so as to determine whether any apparent changes in the number of lymphocytes occurred. All counts were done at the same time of day.

The results are shown in experiment 18. After two control observations had been made at weekly intervals 0.25 ml. of a killed culture of B. typhosus H901 was injected into the test and control groups and the titre of "O" and "H" antibodies determined every week as well as the total numbers of leucocytes and lymphocytes. Each rabbit in the test group received daily by mouth about 400 mg. of p-aminobenzoic acid. At the end of 11 weeks, the experiment was

Page 173.

terminated, since by this time it was apparent that there were no differences between the test and control groups. It must, therefore, be concluded that p-aminobenzoic soid does not exert its effect on resistance to infection by stimulating antibody production, or the number or types of circulating leucocytes.

Sealth, The state sure, in

## Experiment 18. EFFECT OF P-AMINOBENZOIC ACID ON THE DEVELOPMENT OF ANTIBODIES.

Two groups, each containing 3 white Angora rabbits were observed for two weeks. At the end of each week, blood was collected from the car veins, the serum separated and the titre of B. typhosus "H" and "O" antibodies determined by the method of doubling dilutions - starting with a 1:5 dilution of serum to which was added an equal volume of B. typhosus "H" or "C" antigen, so that the first final dilution of serum tested was 1:10. The dilution of serum was then doubled by adding an equal volume of saline so that the final dilution then became 1:20, 1:40, 1:80, 1:160. 1:320, 1:640, 1:1280, 1:2560 until 1:5120 which was the highest dilution tested. For "H" applutination, the serunantigen mixture was incubated at 52°C. for 2 hours, and for "O" agglutination at 52°C. for 24 hours. The total white cell counts were done in the usual way. For the differential cell counts, thin blood smears were stained with Leishman's stain and at least 400 cells counted.

Both groups of rabbits were then injected intravenously with 0.25 c.c. of a killed B. typhosus H901 culture which stimulates the production of both "H" and "O" antibodies in the serum. The test group of rabbits were then treated orally with 5 c.c. of 4% p-aminobenzoic acid (= 200 mg.) in 4. sodium bicarbonate twice daily by means of a capillary pipette, and the antibody titres, total and differential white cell counts done at weekly intervals as above. The control group were treated with 5 c.c. 4% sodium bicarbonate twice daily investigated.

Page 175.

an inter a second a second

120 1200 120

[At end of 5th week rabbit No. 6 was found dead. On the evening previous to death its condition was apparently normal and, at autopsy, no cause for death could be found.7

Titre	of	"H"	Antibodies.
	and the second se		

Test Group.			Control Group.			
Week.	Rabbit	Rabbit 2.	Rabbit 3.	Rabbit 4.	Rabbit 5.	Rabbit 6.
1 2	<1:10	<1:10 <1:10	<1:10 <1:10	<1:10 <1:10	<1:10 <1:10	<1:10 ' <1:10 -
Inject.		25c.c. B.		901.	1.1/6	1.010
4	1:40 1:320	1:160 1:2560	1:320 1:2560	1:640 1:2560	1:160 1:2560	1:640 112560
5	- 1:160 1:320	1:1280 1:640	1:2560	1:1280	1:2560	1:640
7 8	1:640 1:640	1:128d 1:128d	1:2560	1:640 1:1280	1:1280	
9	1:160	1:640	1:640 1:640	1:640 1:640	1:640 1:640	-
11	1:32d	1:1280	1:1280	1:1280	1:2560	_

# Titre of "O" Antibodies.

Test Group.				Control Group.		
Teek.	Rabbit	Rabbit 2.	Rabbit	Rabbit 4.	Rabbit 5.	Rabbit 6.
1 2	1:40 1:20	<1:10 <1:10	<1:10 <1:10	<1:10 <1:10	1:40 1:20	1:20 1:20
injecti	lon of 0.1	25 c.c. B.	typhosus	H901.		
31	1:640	1:640	1:640 1	1:640,	1:640	1:640
41	1:1280	1:640	1:1280	1:1280	1:1280	1:640
5	1:1230	1:640	1:1280	1:320	1:640	1:320
6	1:1280	1:1280	1:640	1:640	1:640	-
7	1:1280	1:640	1:640	1:640	1:640	-
8	1:640	1:320	1:320	1:320	1:320	
9	1:1280	1:640	1:640	1:320	1:640	
10	1:640	1:320	1:320	1:160	1:160	-
11	1:640	1:640	1:640	1:320	1:320	

-----

1

5,500

# Total Thite Cell Counts/c.mms.

10 20

2.1

1.5

31) -2 - 51

and a second

an start and a start and a start a sta

1.3 × 3. × 21

1.1

	T	est Group		Control Group.			
week.	Rabbit 1.	Rabbit 2.	Rabbit 3.	Rabbit 4.	Rabbit 5.	Rabbit 6.	
12	10,000	8,800	10,100 7,800	12,800	18,500	10,900	
Inject	tion of 0.	25 c.c.	B. typhosus	H901.	1		
3 4 5 6 7 8 9 10 11	6,600 7,500 7,300 9,400 2,800 5,100 6,500 6,400 7,100	4,500 4,100 3,400 3,200 2,900 4,900 4,900 4,200 5,800 5,800	7,600 7,000 4,900 5,700 6,600 6,500 6,100 12,200 7,900	11,000 7,400 8,000 5,500 10,500 6,100 7,200 8,600 7,600	3,000 5,500 5,300 5,900 3,900 4,200 4,200 7,000 5,600	5,600 7,400 6,900 	

64 8. 10

4+ 10

1.72

i Bri Lügel -

ļ

## Percentage and Total Lymphocyte Count/c.mm.

Percentages reported to nearest whole number and Totals to nearest hundred.

E HE LI'S E LEALANT OF

10 Y I	Te	st Group.		Control Group.		
Week.	Rebbit 1.	Rabbit 2.	Rabbit 3.	lebbit 4.	Rabbit 5.	Rabbit. 6.
1	48% 4,800	544 4,700	62% 6,200	<b>46</b> 5,900	83: 15,400	535 5,700
2	47%	50% 2,500	80% 6,200	82% 3,300	71% 4,600	51% 2,700
Inject	ion of 0.	25 o.c. E	. typhosus	H901.		
3	<b>61</b> % 4,000	685 3,000	<b>62</b> % 4,700	34% 3,700	61,3 1,800	<b>81%</b> 4,500
4	445 3,300	49%	54% <b>3,</b> 800	475 3,500	64≴ 3,500	70% 5,200
5	26% 1,900	545 1,900	64% 3,100	<b>52</b> % 4,200	56% 2,900	47. 3,300
6	41 <sup>-1</sup> 3,800	54% 1,700	54% 3,100	53% 2,900	63% 3,700	
7	37,5 1,000	73% 2,100	54% 3,500	<b>61</b> % 6,400	63 2,400	-
8	37% 1,900	56 2,700	73% 4,700	66% 4,000	57% 2,400	-
9	43% 2,800	50% 2,100	71% 4,300	-	57% 2,800	-
10	70% 4,500	69% 4,000	69% 8,400	68 ¢ 5,900	55≸ 3,900	-
11	48,6 3,400	<b>29</b> % 1,900	28% 2,200	50% 3,800	68% 3,800	

. Maria The above studies of reticulo-endothelisl activity both as regards phagocytosis and the formation of antibodies, therefore, appear to indicate that p-aminobenzoic acid does not exert its effect by the stimulation of a cellular or a humoral immunity. Since it also does not appear to act by reducing the ability of pathogenic bacteria to develop in the tissues or body fluids of the host animal, it must be concluded that at present the mechanism by which p-aminobenzoic acid increases resistance to infection remains unknown.

ALC: NO

### SUMMARY.

Large quantities of p-aminobenzoic acid were found to inhibit growth on MacConkey's medium of the typhoid-paratyphoid group of organisms to a larger extent than B. coli and other gram-negative, pathogenic, intestinal bacteria. Since sulphapyridine added to the same medium showed a reverse order of inhibition, affecting the growth of the dysenteric organisms most markedly, and since this drug also has a well-marked therapeutic action in bacillary dysentery, it appeared worth while to determine whether the selective inhibition of the growth of B. typhosus on MacConkey's medium by p-aminobenzoic acid could be duplicated in <u>in vivo</u> experiments.

The therapeutic effect of p-aminobenzoic acid in experimentally produced typhoid infections in mice was, however, found to be disappointing, although it was noted that administration, either orally or by injection, of p-aminobenzoic acid to mice for a few days before infecting them with B. typhosus apparently diminished their susceptibility to infection. From this it has been concluded that guantities of p-aminobenzoic acid far in excess of those present under physiological conditions have beneficial effects on the resistance of the mouse. and that the concentrations which can be reached in vivo without texic effects have a stimulating effect both on the animal organism and the infecting bacillus. When, therefore, p-aminobenzoic acid is presented to the tissue cells of the mouse before infection with B. typhosus, it increases the mouse's resistance to infection, but when infection has already occurred, this effect is completely overshadowed by

rage 130.

the much greater stimulating effect of p-aminobenzoic acid on the growth of the infecting organism with whose metabolism it has a far more intimate relationship. Similar effects were noted when tuberculous guinea-pigs were treated with p-aminobenzoic acid in large doses, although there were no demonstrable bacteriostatic effects on the tubercle bacillus itself.

This action of p-aminobenzoic acid has been shown to be due in some way to a stimulation of the natural immunity or "resistance" of the animal, and not to an adverse effect on the in vivo growth of the infecting bacillus. Attempts to elucidate the mechanism of its action have. however. been unsuccessful, the experiments described indicating that p-aminobenzoic acid does not exert its effect by the stimulation of an increased cellular or humoral immunity. since it apparently neither increases the phagocytic activity of the reticulo-endothelial system nor the titre of antibodies produced by injection of an antigen. The activity of the reticulo-endothelial system was tested by injecting thorium dioxide suspensions intravenously into p-aminobenzoic acidtreated and control rate, and then following its deposition in the spleens by X-ray and histological studies. It must be conceded, however, that the relative crudeness of the methode available for investigating the functioning of the reticulo-endothelial system precludes any really accurate assessment of this problem. The effect of p-aminobenzoic acid on the activity of antibodies was investigated by following the development of circulating antibodies after

Page 181.

injection of dead typhoid bacilli into two groups of rabbits, one of which was being treated with p-aminobenzoic acid orally, the other group serving as a control. Total and differential leucocyte counts were also done so as to study any differences in the number of circulating lymphocytes since these cells have also been shown to elaborate antibodies.

It is, therefore, concluded that p-aminobenzoic acid stimulates the natural immunity or "resistance" of an animal to disease, but that, at present, the mechanism by which it increases resistance to infection remains obscure.

### GENERAL SUMMARY AND CONCLUSIONS.

1. In 1940, Fildes focussed attention on p-aminobensoic acid by suggesting that it was an essential metabolite for bacteria and that it was normally associated with an enzyme system in the bacterial cell. He propounded the hypothesis, since supported by many workers, that the sulphonamide group of drugs owed their bacteriostatic action to their structural similarity to p-aminobenzoic sold which enabled them to displace it from its enzyme and stop an essential line of metabolism in the bacterial cell. Attempts to identify the enzyme system involved in the utilisation of p-aminobenzoic acid have, however, led to inconclusive results. Various other theories have, therefore, been propounded to explain the action of sulphonamides including modifications of Fildes' hypothesis.

-

2. The estimation of p-aminobenzoic acid in the studies reported in this thesis has been based on its property of antegonising the sulphonemides, and is a modification of the microbiological method published by McLeod in 1940. It was selected since it is more sensitive than the chemical methods and the reagents are readily obtainable. The method of assay consists in comparing the smount of material which is required to neutralize the inhibitory action of sulpha-, pyridine on Escherichia coli growing in a synthetic medium, with that of a standard solution of p-aminobenzoic acid under identical conditions. 3. Prom a study of the behaviour of various derivatives of p-aminobenzoic acid under the assay conditions used, the finding of other workers is confirmed that the inactive form, in which most of the p-aminobenzoic acid is excreted in the urine, is p-acetyl-aminobenzoic acid. The suggestion is, however, made that <u>under physiological conditions</u> all the p-aminobenzoic acid is conjugated and excreted either as p-acetylaminobenzoic acid or p-aminobenzoylglycuronate.

Page 183.

In view of the possible significance of p-aminobenzoic **L**. acid as a member of the vitamin B complex, a study of its absorption and excretion in man after feeding minute dosea was undertaken. Previous studies in the literature have been concerned with the excretion following relatively large doses of p-aminobenzoic acid. The results obtained suggest that the human organism deals with p-aminobenzoic scid as it would a toxic substance and not as a vitamin. Then doses up to 25 mg. were fed, it was found that all the p-aminobenzoic acid was conjugated and rapidly excreted, - completely within 16 hours or less - indicating that the normal liver was able to "detoxicate" up to this quantity at one time. Even with minute doses of 1 mg., p-aminobenzoic acid appeared in the urine in the first specimen collected. p-Aminobenzoic acid was found to be rapidly absorbed - certainly within 8 hours from the intestine, but the absorption was apparently incomplete.

Page 184.

Although it has become very difficult to classify the 5. vitamins as a distinct and well-defined group of compounds. the claims of p-aminobenzoic acid to be regarded as a member of the vitamin B complex are reviewed. Anabacher reported that the absence of p-aminobenzoic acid from the diet. produced achromotrichia in the rat and defective growth in the Other workers have claimed that it improved lactachick. tion in the rat and decreased the percentage of still-births. In man it has been claimed to be an anti-gray hair vitamin and also an anti-sterility vitamin. However, many of these reported effects lack confirmation. and observations by different groups of workers are, in fact, actually conflicting. The evidence that p-aminobenzoic acid produces deficiency symptoms - perhaps the most important criterion of a vitamin - must, therefore, be considered inadequate and inconclusive. Further, any action that it appears to have is believed by most workers to be indirect. and on the intestinal micro-organisms rather than on the animal itself. This explanation accords well with the firmly-established effects of p-aminobenzoic scid on micro-organisms.

6. It is noteworthy that as far as its physiological effectiveness in minute amounts is concerned — another characteristic of vitamins — the reported work shows that the quantities required to remove deficiency effects are far greater than those that could be ingested in a normal diet. It appears legitimate, therefore, to conclude that although p-aminobenzoic acid is a growth-factor for bacteria yeasts and fungi, it does not fulfil the criteria required of a vitamin given in any of the definitions reviewed in this thesis.

7. The negligible quantities of p-aminobenzoic acid occurring in various foods and the fact that yeast. a micro-organism, is its richest source, suggest that the minute amounts of p-aminobenzoic acid present in various animal tissues and fluids, and finally excreted in the urine, are also derived from micro-organisms, viz. bacterial growth in the large intestine, and not from the food ingested. This hypothesis was tested by studying the content of p-aminobenzoic acid in the urine after producing intestinal bacteriostasis with sulphaguanidine. A marked drop in the excretion of p-aminobenzoic acid was shown to occur, indicating that the traces of p-aminobenzoic acid present in the urine of man can be considered to originate in the intestine where it is produced during the growth and multiplication of the bacterial flora. Confirmation of this hypothesis is provided by the observation that p-aminobenzoic acid can in fact be absorbed from the large intestine.

8. The above findings suggest that <u>p-eminobenzoic acid</u> exerts its major physiological function in animals and man indirectly, by stimulating the intestinal bacteria to produce the several vitaming which they have been shown to synthesize, and whose importance on the mammalian organism is well cetablished.

Page 186.

In vitro, large quantities of p-aminobenzoic acid were 9. found to inhibit growth of the typhoid-paratyphoid group of bacteria to a greater extent than other gram-negative intes-The therapeutic effect of non-toxic dogeg tinal organisma. of p-aminobenzoic acid in experimentally produced typhoid infections in mice was, however, found to be disappointing. Nevertheless, the administration of large doces of p-sminobenzoic acid before infecting the mice, was apparently of benefit. The interpretation put on these experiments is that p-aminebenzoic acid increases the "resistance" of mice to infection, but that this effect is completely overshadowed by the much greater stimulating effect of p-aminobenzoic acid on the growth of the infecting organism with whose metabolism it has a far more intimate relationship. Similar effects were noted in experimentally-produced tuberculosis in guineapige.

10. <u>The mechanism by which p-aminobenzoic acid stimulates</u> <u>the natural immunity or resistance of an animal to disease</u> <u>remains obscure</u>, since it stimulates neither a cellular nor a humoral immunity. The experiments described indicate that p-aminobenzoic acid apparently increases neither the phagocytic activity of the reticulo-endothelial system nor the titre of antibodies produced by injection of an antigen.

### BIBLIOGRAPHY.

- Ahlström, L., v. Euler, H., and Wallerström. G. (1942). Archiv. Kemi, Mineral. Geol., 16B, No. 1, 9 pp, 1942. Chem. Zentr., 1942. II. 2813-14. (Quoted from Chem. Abstracts. May 20, 1944, 38 No.10, 2387.. p-Aminobenzoic acid (Vitamin H', and sulphonamides. I. Action on higher animals.
- 2. Anebacher, S. (1941). Science, 1941. 93, 164. p-Aminobenzoic acid, a vitamin.
- Ansbacher, S. (1941a). Proc. Soc. exp. Biol., N.Y., 1941, 46, 421. Additional observations on vitamin K-deficient diets.
- Ansbacher, S. (1944). Vitamins and Hormones, 1944, 2, 215-254. Fara-aminobenzoic acid - experimental and clinical studies.
- 5. Astwood, E.B. (1943a). J. Pharmacol., 1943, 78, 79. The chemical nature of compounds which inhibit the function of the thyroid gland.
- Astwood, E.B. (1943b). J. Amer. med. Ass., 1943, 122, 78. Treatment of hyperthyroidism with thiourea and thiouracil.
- 7. Astwood, E.B., Sullivan, J., Bissell, A., and Typlowitz, R. (1943). Endocrinology, 1943, 32, 210. Action of certain sulfonamides and of thiourea upon the function of the thyroid gland of the rat.
- 8. Banay, R.S. (1942). Quoted from Ansbacher, S. (1944). Vitamins and Hormones Vol. II, 1944. 224. Para-aminobenzoic acid - experimental and clinical studies.
- Beadle, G.W., and Tatum, E.L. (1941). Proc. Nat. Acad. Sci., 1941, 27, 499. Genetic control of biochemical reactions in Neurospora.

- Behagel, O., Rothman, S., and Schultze, W. (1928) Strahlentherapie, 1928, 28, 110. Quoted from Ansbacher (1944).
- 11. Bird, J.C. (1942). J. Amer. pharm. Ass., 1942, 31, 151. Ultraviolet absorption of surface anaesthetics.
- Black, S., McKibbin, J.M., and Elvehjem, C.A. (1941) Proc. Boc. exp. Biol., N.Y., 1941, 47, 308. Use of sulfaguanidine in nutrition experiments.
- Black, S., Overman, R.S., Elvehjem, C.A., and Link, K.P. (1942/. J. biol. Chem., 1942, 145, 137. Effect of sulfaguanidine on rat growth and plasma prothrombin.
- 14. Blanchard, K.C. (1941). J. biol. Chem., 1941, 140, 919. The isolation of p-Aminobenzoic acid from yeast.
- 15. Blum, H.F. (1941,. hotodynamic action and diseases caused by light. Reinhold, New York (1941). Quoted from Ansbacher (1944).
- 16. Brandaleone, H., Main, E., and Steele, J.M. (1943). Proc. Soc. exp. Biol., N.Y., 1943, 53, 47. Effect of calcium pantothenate and para-aminobenzoic acid on the gray hair of humans.
- 17. Brandaleone, H., Main, E., and Steele, J.M. (1944). Amer. J. med. Sci., 1944, 208, 315. The effect of calcium pantothenate and para-aminobenzoic acid on gray hair in man; study on group of young and older individuals.
- Bratton, A.C., and Marshall, E.K., Jr. (1939).
   J. biol. Chem., 1939, 128, 537. A new coupling component for sulfanilamide determination.
- Briggs, G.M., Jr., Lucky, T.D., Mills, R.C., Elvehjem, C.A., and Hart, E.B. (1943). Proc. Soc. exp. Biol., N.Y., 1943, 52, 7-10. Effect of p-aminobenzoic acid when added to purified chick diets deficient in unknown vitamins.
- 20. Campbell, H.N. (1941). Surgery, 1941, 9, 825. The statistical method.
- Chattaway, P.M., Happold, P.C., Lythgoe, B., Sandford, M., and Todd, A.R. (1942). Biochem. J., 1942, 36, VI. The nutrition of lactobacillus casei E.
- 22. Climenko, D.R., and McChesney, E.W. (1942). Proc. Soc. exp. Biol., N.Y., 1942, 51, 157. Role of inositol and p-aminobenzoic acid in normal lactation.
- Dimond, N.S. (1941). Science, 1941, 94, 420. P-aminobenzoic acid presents the growth-inhibitory action of sulfanilamide.

- 24. Doisy, E.A., Jr., and Westerfeld, W.W. (1943). J.biol. Chem., 1943, 149, 229. Relationship of acetoin to metabolic acetylations.
- Eckert, H.W. (1943). J. biol. Chem., 1943, 148, 197.
   Determination of p-aminobenzoic acid, conjugated p-aminobenzoic acid, and p-nitrobenzoic acid in blood.
- 26. Editorial, New Engl. J. Med., 1945, 232, 204. Vitamins and gray hair.
- 27. Eller, J.J., and Diaz, L.A. (1943). N.Y. St. J. Med., 1943, 43, 1331. Vitamins for gray hair.
- Emerson, G.A. (1941). Proc. Soc. exp. Biol., N.Y., 1941, 47. 448. Failure to cure or prevent graying of rate with p-aminobenzoic acid.
- 29. Pildes, P. (1940). Lancet, 1940, 1, 238, 955. A rational approach to research in chemotherapy.
- 30. Findlay, G.M. (1940). Brit. J. exp. Path., 1940, 21, 356. The action of sulphanilamide on the virus of lymphogranuloma veneroum.
- 31. Pinkelstein. N., Aliminosa. L.M., and Smith, H.W. (1941). Amer. J. Physiol., 1941, 133, 276. The renal clearances of hippuric acid and pyridone derivatives.
- 32. Fox, C.L., Jr. (1942). Proc. Soc. exp. Biol., N.Y. 1942, 51, 102. Production of diazotizable substance by Escherichia coli during sulfonamide bacteriostasis.
- 33. Fuller, A.T. (1942). Lancet, 1942, 242, 760. Rapid clinical method for the estimation of sulphanilamide.
- 34. Green, H.N., and Bielschowsky, F. (1942a). Brit. J. exp. Path., 1942, 23, 1. The mode of action of sulphanilamide. II. The antisulphanilamide and other anti-bacteriostatic factors in bacterial extracts.
- 35. Green, H.N., and Bielschowsky, F. (1942b). Erit. J. exp. Path., 1942, 23, 13. The mode of action of sulphanilamide. III. The relation of chemical structure to the bacteriostatic action of aromatic sulphur, selenium and tellurium compounds.
- 36. György, P. (1942). Ann. Rev. Biochem., 1942. 11, 309. The water-soluble vitamins.
- 37. Harris, J.S. and Kohn, H.I. (1941). J. Pharmacol., 1941, 73, 383. On the mode of action of the sulfonamides. II. The specific antagonism between methionine and the sulfonamides in Escherichia col1.

- 38. Harrow, B., Mazur, A., and Sherwin, C.P. (1933). J. biol. Chem., 1933, 102, 35. Studies in acetylation. The fate of p-aminobenzoic acid in the rabbit.
- 39. Henderson, L.M., McIntyre, J.M., aisman, H.A., and Elvehjem, C.A. (1942, J. Nutrit., 1942, 23, 47. Fantothenic acid in the nutrition of the rat.
  - 40. Henry, R J. (1943). Eact. Rev., 1943, 7, 175-262. The mode of action of sulfonamides.
  - 41. Hirsch, J. (1942). Science, 1942, 96, 139. "The sulfanilamide effect" of substances devoid of sulfo groups.
  - 42. Johnson, F.H. (1942). Science, 1942, 95, 104. Mechanism of p-aminobenzoic acid action and the parallel effects of ethyl carbamate (urethane).
  - 43. Keltch, A.K., Baker, L.A., Krahl. M.E., and Clowes, G.H.A. (1941). Proc. Soc. exp. Biol., N.Y., 1941, 47, 533. Anti-sulfapyridine and anti-sulfathiazole effect of local anaesthetics derived from p-aminobenzoic acid.
  - 44. Kirch, E.R., and Bergeim, O. (1943). J. biol. Chem., 1943, 148, 445. Determination of p-aminobenzoic acid.
  - 45. Kohn, H.I., and Harris, J.S. (1941). J. harmacol.,
     1941, 73, 343. On the mode of action of the sulfonamides. I. Action on Escherichia coli.
  - 45. Kohn, H.I., and Harris, J.S. (1943). J. Pharmacol., 1943, 77, 1. On the mode of action of the sulfonamides. III. Purines, amino-acids, peptones and pancreas as antagonists and potentiators of sulfonamides in E. coli.
  - 47. Lamanna, C. (1942). Science, 1942, 95, 304. Growth stimulation by sulfanilamide in low concentration.
  - 48. Landy, M., and Dicken, D.N. (1942). Nature, 1942 149, 244. Neutralization of sulphonamide inhibition of yeast growth by p-aminobenzoic acid.
  - 49. Landy, M., and Dicken, D.M. (1942). J. biol. Chem., 1942, 146, 109. A microbiological method for the determination of p-aminobenzoic acid.
  - 50. Landy, M., Larkum, N.W., Cewald, E.J., and Streightoff, F. (1943). Science, 1943, 97, 265. Increased synthesis of p-aminobenzoic acid associated with the development of sulfonamide resistance in staphylococcus aureus.

- 51. Landy, M., and Wyeno, J. (1941). Proc Soc. exp. Biol., N.Y., 1941, 46, 59. Neutralization (in vitro) of bacteriostatic activity of sulfonamides by p-aminobenzoic acid.
- 52. La Rosa, W.V. (1943). Proc. Soc. exp. Biol., N.R., 1943, 53, 98. Test paper for rapid estimation of level of sulfonamide in serum.
- 53. Lewin, W. (1938). Publications of the South African Institute for Medical Research, January 1938. Typhoid fever on the Witwatersrand. M.D. Thesis. University of the Witwatersrand.
- 54. Lewis, J.C. (1942). J. biol. Chem., 1942, 146, 441. A lactobacillus assay method for p-aminobenzoic acid.
- 55. Lipmann, F. (1941). J. biol. Chem., 1941, 139, 977. The oxidation of p-aminobenzoic acid catalyzed by peroxidase, and its inhibition by sulfanilamide.
- 56. Loomis, T.A., Hubbard, R.S., and Neter, E (1941). Proc. Soc. exp. Biol., N.Y., 1941, 47, 159. Inhibition of bacteriostatic action of sulfanilamide by yeast extracts.
- 57. Lustig, B., Goldfarb A.R., and Gerstl, B. (1944). Arch. Biochem., 1944, 5, 59. Studies on the metabolism of pantothenic acid and p-aminobenzoic acid.
- 58. McCarty M. (1941). Proc. Soc. exp. Biol., N.Y. 1941, 46, 133. Effect of p-aminobenzoic acid on therapeutic and toxic action of sulfapyridine.
- 59. McIlwain, H. (1942). Science. 1942, 95, 509. The biochemical specificity of sulfanilamide and of other antibacterial agents.
- 60. McIlwain, H. (1942a). Brit. J. exp. Path., 1942, 23, 265. Correlation of in vitro and in vivo drug action through specific antagonists: sulphanilamide and p-aminobenzoate.
- 61. Mackenzie, J.B., Mackenzie. C.G., and McCollum, E.V. (1941). Science, 1941, 94, 518. The effect of sulfaguanidine on the thyroid of the rat.
- Mackenzie, C.G., and Mackenzie, J.B. (1943). Endocrinology, 1943, 32, 185. Effect of sulfonamides and thioureas on the thyroid gland and basal metabolism.
- 63. MacLeod, C.M., (1939). Froc. Soc. exp. Biol., N.Y., 1939, 41, 215. Metabolism of "sulfapyridine-fast" and parent strains of pneumococcus type I.

- 64. MacLeod, C.M. (1940). J. exp. Med., 1940, 72, 217. The inhibition of the bacteriostatic action of sulfonsmide drugs by substances of animal and bacterial origin.
- 65. Maher, F.T. (1944). Illinois monographs in the Medical Sciences, Vol. 5, Nos. 1-2. The reticuloendothelial system in sulfonamide activity.
- 66. Maier, J. and Riley, E. (1942). Proc. Soc. exp. Biol., N.Y., 1942, 50, 152. Inhibition of antimalarial action of sulfonamides by p-aminobenzoic acid.
- 67. Marshall, Jr., E.K., Litchfield, Jr., J.T. and Thite, H.J. (1942). J. Tharmacol., 1942, 75, 89. Sulfonamide therapy of malaria in ducka.
- Martin, G.J. (1942a). Amer. J. Physiol., 1942, 136, 124. The interrelationship of p-aminobenzoic acid and inositol.
- 69. Martin, G.J. (1942b). Froc. Soc. exp. Biol., N.Y., 1942, 51, 353. "Polic acid" in nutritional achromotrichia.
- 70. Martin, G.J. (1942c). Froc. Soc. exp. Biol., N.Y., 1942, 51, 56. p-Amihobenzoic acid and sulphonamides in rat nutrition.
- 71. Martin, G.J. (1943). Arch. Biochem., 1943, 3, 61. Study of various chemicals depressing thyroid gland.
- 72. Martin, G.J., and Ansbacher, S. (1941). J. biol. Chem., 1941, 138, 441. Confirmatory evidence of the chromotrichial activity of p-aminobenzoic acid.
- Martin C.J., Ichniowski, W.A., Wisansky, W.A., and Ansbacher, S. (1942). Amer. J. Physiol., 1942, 136, 66. Oxidases, pressor smines and hypertension.
- 74. Martin, G.J., Wisansky, W.A., and Anabacher, S. (1941). Proc. Socl exp. Biol., N.Y., 1941, 47, 26. Paraaminobenzoic acid and dopa reaction.
- 75. Mawson, C.A. (1942). Biochem. J., 1942, 36, 845. A note on the estimation of the sulphonamide drugs by the method of %erner.
- 76. Mirick, G.S. (1941). J. clin. Invest, 1941, 20, 434. A study of sulfonamide inhibitors by the use of a scil bacillus which decomposes p-aminobenzoic acid.
- 77. Mirick, G.S. (1943). J. exp. Med., 1943. 78, 255. The Oxidation of p-aminobenzoic acid and anthranilic acid by specifically adapted enzymes of a soil bacillus.

- 78. Mitchell, H.K.. Isbell, E.R., and Thompson, R.C (1943). J. biol. Chem., 1943, 147, 485. Microbiological assays for p-aminobenzoic acid.
- 79. Morgan, A.F., Cook, B.B., and Davidson, H.G. (1938). J. Eutrit., 1938, 15, 27. Vitamin B<sub>2</sub> deficiencies as affected by dietary carbohydrate.
- Morris, C.J.O. (1941). Biochem. J., 1941, 35, 952. The determination of sulphanilamide and its derivatives.
- 81. Nielsen, E., and Elvehjem, C.A. (1942). J. biol. Chem., 1942, 145, 713. The growth-promoting effect of folic acid and biotin in rate fed succinylsulfathiagole.
- Oettel, H. (1936). Arch. exp. Path. Pharmak., 1936, 183, 319. Quoted from Martin, G.J., and Ansbacher, S. (1941).
- 83. Park. C.R., and Wood, W.B. (1942). Johns Hopk. Hosp. Bull., 1942, 70, 19. p-Aminobenzoic acid as a metabolite essential for bacterial growth.
- 84. Peterson, O.L., and Pinland, M. (1914). Amer. J. Med. Sci., 1944, 207, 166. Sulfonamide inhibiting action of procaine.
- Quick, A.J. (1932). J. biol. Chem., 1932, 96, 83.
   The relationship between chemical structure and physiological response. I. The conjugation of substituted benzoic acids.
- 86. Rose, F.L., and Bevan, H.G.L. (1944). Biochem. J., 1944, 33. 116. A new coupling component and simplified method for the estimation of sulphanilamide drugs.
- 87. Rosenberg, H.R. (1942). Chemistry and Physiology of the Vitamins. Interscience Publishers. Inc., New York, N.Y. 1942.
- 88. Rothman, S. (1926). Strahlentherapie, 1922, 22, 729. Quoted from Ansbacher (1944).
- 89. Rothman, S., and Rubin, J. (1942). J. Invest. Dermatol., 1942, 5, 445. Quoted from Ansbacher (1944).
- 90. Rubbo, S.D., and Gillespie, J.M. (1940). Nature, Lond., 1940, 146, 838. Para-aminobenzoic acid as a bacterial growth factor.
- 91. Rubbo, S.D., Maxwell, M., Fairbridge, R.A., and Gillespie, J.M. (1941). Aust. J. exp. Eiol. med. Sci., 1941, 19, 185. The bacteriology, growth factor requirements and fermentation reactions of Clostridium acetobutylicum (Weizmann).

- 92. Rubbo, S.D., and Gillespie, J.M. (1942). Lancet, 1942, 1, 36. Mode of action of sulphonamides in vitro.
- 93. Sahyun, M., Beard, P., Schultz, E.W., Snow, J., and Cross. E. (1936). J. infect. Dis., 1936, 58, 28. Growth stimulating factors for micro-organisms.
- 94. Scott, C.C., and Robbins, E.B. (1942). Proc. Soc. exp. Biol., N.Y., 1942, 49, 184. Toxicity of p-aminobenzoic acid.
- 95. Selbie, F.R. (1940). Brit. J. exp. Fath., 1940, 21, 90. The inhibition of the action of sulphanilamide in mice by p-aminobenzoic acid.
- 96. Sevag, M.G., and Green, M.N. (1944a). J. Bact., 1944, 47,450. Indispensability of tryptophane, and glucose or pyruvate for the formation of arylamines (para-aminobenzoic acid p.a.b.a.?) by staphylococcus aureus.
- 97. Sevag, M.G., and Green, M.N. (1944b), J. Bact., 1944, 48, 615. The mechanism of resistance to sulfonamides. I. Factors controlling the formation of arylamine from tryptophane by staphylococcus aureus.
- 98. Sevag, M.G., and Green, M.N. (1944c). J. Bact., 1944, 48, 623. The mechanism of resistance to sulfonagides. II. Absence of correlation between resistance and the formation of arylamine by Staphylococcus aureus. Non-interference with the utilization of glucose as a critical factor in the development of resistance to sulfonamides.
- 99. Sevag, M.G., and Green, M.N. (1944d). J. Bact., 1944, 48, 631. The mechanism of resistance to sulfonamides. III. Fantothenic acid and tryptophane metabolism: the role of pantothenic acid in the synthesis of tryptophane by Staphylococcus aureus and the effect of vitamins on tryptophane in exercising antagonism to sulfonamides.
- 100. Sevag, M.G., Heney, J., and Richardson, R.A. (1945). J. Bact., 1945, 49, 71. Ltudies on the action of sulfonamides on the respiration and growth of bacteria. A. Factors controlling the inhibition by sulfonamides of carboxylases. II. Antagonism between p-aminobenzoic acid and sulfathiazole.
- 101. Sevag, M.G., and Shelburne, M. (1942). J. Bact., 1942, 43, 447. The respiration of streptococcus pyogenes and pneumococcus type I. III. Bearing of respiration on existing theories of the mechanism of the action of the chemotherapeutic agents.

- 102. Sevag, M.G., Shelburne, N., and Mudd, S. (1942). J. gen. Physiol., 1942, 25, 805. The action of sulfonamides on the respiration of bacteria and yeast. Inhibition of bacterial and yeast barboxylases by sulfonamide drugs structurally related to cocarboxylase.
- 103. Sevag, M.G., Shelburne, M., and Mudd, S. (1945). J. Bact., 1945, 49, 65. Studies on the action of sulfonemides on the respiration and growth of bacteria. A. Factors controlling the inhibition by sulfonamides of carboxylases. I. Antagonism between cocarboxylase and sulfathiazole.
- 104. Sieve, B.F. (1941). Science, 1941, 94, 257. Clinkal achromotrichia (preliminary report).
- 105. Sieve, B.F. (1942). Sth. Med. Surg., 1942, 104, 135. The clinical effects of a new B-complex factor, para-aminobenzoic acid, on pigmentation and fertility.
- 106. Snyder, C.D. (1942). Physiol. Rev., 1942, 22, 54. Recent advances in knowledge of the liver.
- 107. Snyder, J.C., Maier and Anderson (1942). Report to the Division of Medical Sciences, National Research Council, Dec. 26, 1942. Quoted from Yeomans et al (1944).
- 108. Spink, W.W., Wright, L.D., Vivino, J.J., and Skeggs, H.R. (1944). J. exp. Med., 1944, 79, 331. Paraaminobenzoic acid production by staphylococci.
- 109. Stamp, T.C. (1939). Lancet, 1939, 2, 10. Bacteriostatic action of sulphanilamide in vitro.
- 110. Stepp, W., Kühnau, J., and Schroeder, H. (1938). The Vitamina and their Clinical Applications. Translated by Bouman, H.A.H. The Vitamin Products Co., Milwaukee, Tisconsin, 1938.
- 111. Strauss, E., and Finland, M. (1941). Amer. J. med. Sci., 1941, 201, 730. Failure of para-aminobenzoic acid to inhibit sulfonamide rashes and fevers.
- 112. Strauss, E., Lowell, F.C., and Finland, M. (1941). J. clin. Invest., 1941, 20, 189. Observations on the inhibition of sulfonamide action by paraaminobenzoic acid.
- 113. Sure, B. (1941a). J. Nutrit., 1941, 22, 499. Dietary requirements for fertility and lactation. XXIX. The existence of a new dietary factor essential for lactation.

. .

- 114. Sure, B. (1941b). Science, 1941, 94, 167. Dietary requirements for fertility and lactation. XXX. Role of p-aminobenzoic acid and inositol in lactation. Preliminary report.
- 115. Sure, B. (1943). J. Mutrit., 1943, 26, 275. Dietary requirements for fertility and lactation. (XXI. Further studies on the role of p-aminobenzoic acid and inositol in lactation and growth of albino rat.
- 116. Tatum, E.L., and Beadle, G.W. (1942). Proc. nat. Acad. Sci., Wash., 1942, 28, 234. Genetic control of biochemical reactions in Neurospora: an "aminobenzoicless" mutant.
- 117. Tauber, H., and Lauffer, S. (1941). J. Amer. chem. Soc., 1941, 63, 1488. A colour test for p-aminobenzoic acid, the chromotrichia factor.
- 118. Thompson, R.C., Isbell, E.R., and Mitchell, H.K. (1943). J. biol. Chem., 1943, 148, 281. A microbiological assay method for p-aminobenzoic acid.
- 119. Unna, K., Richards, G.V., and Sampson, W.L. (1941). J. Nutrit., 1941, 22, 553. Studies on nutritional achromotrichia in rats.
- 120. Waieman, H.A., Mille, R.C., and Elvehjem, C.A. (1942). J. Nutrit., 1942, 24, 187. Factors required by chicks maintained on a heated diet.
- 121. Werner, A.E.A. (1939). Lancet, 1939, 236, 18. Estimation of sulphanilamide in biological fluids.
- 122. Wiedling, S. (1941). Science, 1941, 94, 389. P-aminobenzoic acid, an essential metabolite for autotrophic organisms.
- 123. Williams, R.J. (1943). Ann. Rev. Biochem., 1943, 12, 305. Water-soluble vitamins.
- 124. Wisansky, W.A., Martin, G.J., and Ansbacher, S. (1941). J. Amer. chem. Soc., 1941, 63, 1771. p-Amihobenzoic acid and tyrosinase activity.
- 125. Wood, W.B., Jr. (1942). J. exp. Ked., 1942, 75, 369. Studies on the antibacterial action of the sulfonamide drugs. I. The relation of p-aminobenzoic acid to the mechanism of bacteriostasis.
- 126. Wood, W.B., Jr., and Austrian, R. (1942). J. exp. Med., 1942, 75, 383. Studies on the antibacterial action of the sulfonamide drugs. II. The possible relation of drug activity to substances other than p-apinobenzoic acid.

- 127. Woods, D.D. (1940). Brit. J. exp. Path., 1940, 21, 74. The relation of p-aminobenzoic acid to the mechanism of the action of sulphanilamide.
- 128. Woods, D.D., and Fildes, P. (1940). J. Soc. chem. Ind. Lond., 1940, 59, 133. The antisulphanilamide activity (in vitro, of p-aminobenzoic acid and related compounds.
- 129. Wyse, O., Strandskov, F.B., and Schmelkes, F.C. (1942). Science, 1942, 96, 236. Mechanism of sulfonamide action. II. Inhibition of bacterial respiration by sulfanilamide and by its inactive isomers.
- 130. Yeomane, A., Snyder, J.C., Murray, E.S., Zarafonetis, C.J.D., and Ecke, R.S. J. Amer. med. Ass., 1944, 126, 349. The therapeutic effect of para-aminobenzoic acid in louse-borne typhus fever.
- 131. Young, L. (1939). Physiol. Rev., 1939, 19, 323. The detoxication of carbocyclic compounds.